

RASHTRAPATI BHAVAN
LIBRARY



Reg. No. 981

Clas. No. V(a) - D

The Shakespeare Head Edition
of the Novels and Selected Writings
of Daniel Defoe

The FORTUNATE MISTRESS

Volume II



The FORTUNATE MISTRESS or A HISTORY of the LIFE

and Vast Variety of Fortunes of
Mademoiselle de Belean, afterwards call'd
The Countess *de Wintseisheim*,
in Germany.

Being the Person known by the Name of the LADY
ROXANA, in the Time of King *Charles II.*

Volume II

OXFORD: BASIL BLACKWELL
Publisher to the SHAKESPEARE HEAD PRESS
of STRATFORD-UPON-AVON

1927

SEVEN HUNDRED AND FIFTY COPIES
OF THIS EDITION HAVE BEEN PRINTED
BY THE SHAKESPEARE HEAD PRESS
STRATFORD-UPON-AVON OF WHICH
SEVEN HUNDRED AND TWENTY COPIES
ARE FOR SALE

CONTENTS

<i>Continuation of The Fortunate Mistress</i>	Page 1
<i>The History of the remarkable Life of John Sheppard</i>	p.161
<i>A Narrative of all the Robberies, Escapes, &c., of John Sheppard</i>	p.207
<i>A True Relation of the Apparition of one Mrs. Veal, The next Day after Her Death: to one Mrs. Bargrave At Canterbury</i>	p.229

(LIBRARY)

Class No.....

[illegible]

The FORTUNATE MISTRESS or A History of the Life, etc.

MY Amour with my Lord-----began now to draw to an end, and indeed, notwithstanding his Money, it had lasted so long, that I was much more sick of his Lordship than he cou'd be of me; he grew old, and fretful, and captious, and I must add, which made the Vice itself begin to grow surfeiting and nauseous to me, he grew worse and wickeder the older he grew, and that to such Degree, as is not fit to write of; and made me so weary of him, that upon one of his capricious Humours, which he often took Occasion to trouble me with, I took Occasion to be much less complaisant to him than I us'd to be; and as I knew him to be hasty, I first took care to put him into a little Passion, and then to resent it, and this brought us to Words, in which I told him, I thought he grew sick of me; and he answer'd, in a heat, that *truly so he was*; I answer'd that I found his Lordship was endeavouring to *make me sick too*; that I had met with several such Rubs from him of late; and that he did not use me as he us'd to do, and I begg'd his Lordship he would make himself easie: This I spoke with an Air of Coldness and Indifference such as I knew he cou'd not bear; but I did not downright quarrel with him, and tell him *I was sick of him too*, and desire him to quit me, for I knew that wou'd come of itself; besides, I had receiv'd a great-deal of handsome

Usage from him, and I was loth to have the Breach be on my Side, that he might not be able to say I was ungrateful.

But he put the Occasion into my Hands, for he came no more to me for two Months; indeed, I expected a Fit of Absence, for such I had had several times before, but not for above a Fortnight or three-Weeks at most: But after I had staid a Month, which was longer than ever he kept away yet, I took a new Method with him, for I was resolv'd now it should be in my Power to continue, or not as I thought fit; at the end of a Month, therefore, I remov'd and took lodgings at *Kensington Gravel-Pitts*, and that Part next to the Road to *Acton*, and left no-body in my Lodgings but *Amy* and a Footman; with proper instructions how to behave, when his Lordship being come to himself, should think fit to come again, which I knew he wou'd.

About the end of two Months, he came in the Dusk of the Evening as usual; The Footman answered him, and told him his Lady was not at-home, but there was Mrs. *Amy* above; so he did not order her to be call'd down, but went up-Stairs into the Dining-Room, and Mrs. *Amy* came to him; he asked where I was? My Lord, *said she*, my Mistress has been remov'd a good-while from hence, and lives at *Kensington*. Ay, Mrs. *Amy*! how come you to be here, then? My Lord, *said she*, we are here till the Quarter-Day, because the Goods are not remov'd, and to give Answers, if any comes to ask for my Lady. Well, and what Answer are you to give me? Indeed, my Lord, *says Amy*, I have no particular Answer to your Lordship, but to tell you, and every-body else, where my Lady lives, that they may not think she's run away: No, Mrs. *Amy*, says he, I don't think she's run away, but

indeed I can't go after her so far as that; *Amy* said nothing to that, but made a Curtsie, and said, she believ'd I wou'd be there again for a Week or two, in a little time: How little time, Mrs. *Amy*? says my Lord: She comes next *Tuesday*, says *Amy*. Very well, says my Lord, I'll call and see her then; and so he went away.

Accordingly I came on the *Tuesday*, and stayed a Fortnight, but he came not; so I went back to *Kensington*, and after that I had very few of his Lordship's Visits, which I was very glad of, and in a little time after was more glad of it, than I was at first, and upon a far better Account too.

For now I began not to be sick of his Lordship only, but really I began to be sick of the Vice; and as I had good Leisure now to divert and enjoy myself in the World as much as it was possible for any Woman to do, that ever liv'd in it, so I found that my Judgment began to prevail upon me to fix my Delight upon nobler Objects than I had formerly done; and the very beginning of this brought some just Reflections upon me, relating to things past, and to the former Manner of my living; And tho' there was not the least Hint in all this, from what may be call'd Religion or Conscience, and far from any-thing of Repentance, or any-thing that was a-kin to it, especially at first; yet the Sence of things, and the Knowledge I had of the World, and the vast Variety of Scenes that I had acted my Part in, began to work upon my Sences, and it came so very strong upon my Mind one Morning, when I had been lying awake some time in my Bed, as if somebody had ask'd me the question, *What was I a Whore for now?* It occur'd naturally upon this Enquiry, that at first I yielded to the Importunity of my Circumstances, the Misery of which, the Devil dis-

mally aggravated, to draw me to comply; for I confess I had strong Natural Aversions to the Crime at first, partly owing to a virtuous Education, and partly to a Sence of Religion; but the Devil, and that greater Devil of Poverty, prevail'd, and the Person who laid Siege to me, did it in such an obliging, and I may almost say, irresistible Manner, all still manag'd by the Evil Spirit; for I must be allow'd to believe, that he has a Share in all such things, if not the whole Management of them; But, I say, it was carried on by that Person in such an irresistible Manner, that (as I said when I related the Fact) there was no withstanding it: These Circumstances, I say, the Devil manag'd, not only to bring me to comply, but he continued them as Arguments to fortify my Mind against all Reflection, and to keep me in that horrid Course, I had engag'd in, as if it were honest and lawful.

But not to dwell upon that now; this was a Pretence, and here was something to be said, tho' I acknowledge it ought not to have been sufficient to me at all; but, I say, to leave that, all this was out of Doors; the Devil himself cou'd not form one Argument, or put one Reason into my Head *now*, that cou'd serve for an Answer, no, not so much as a pretended Answer to this Question, *Why I shou'd be a Whore now*.

It had for a-while been a little kind of Excuse to me, that I was engag'd with this wicked old Lord, and that I cou'd not, in Honour, forsake him; but how foolish and absurd did it look, to repeat the Word Honour on so vile an Occasion? As if a Woman shou'd prostitute her Honour in Point of Honour; horrid inconsistency; Honour call'd upon me to detest the Crime and the Man too, and to have resisted all the Attacks which from the beginning had been made upon my Virtue; and Honour, had

it been consulted, wou'd have preserv'd me honest from the Beginning:

For HONESTY and HONOUR are the same.

This, however, shows us with what faint Excuses and with what Trifles we pretend to satisfy ourselves, and suppress the Attempts of Conscience in the Pursuit of agreeable Crime, and in the possessing those Pleasures which we are loth to part with.

But this Objection wou'd now serve no longer; for my Lord had, in some sort, broke his Engagements (*I won't call it Honour*: again) with me, and had so far slighted me, as fairly to justify my entire quitting of him now; and so, as the Objection was fully answer'd, the Question remain'd still unanswered, *Why am I a Whore now?* Nor indeed, had I any-thing to say for myself, *even to myself*; I cou'd not without blushing, as wicked as I was, answer, that I lov'd it for the sake of the Vice, and that I delighted in being a Whore, *as such*; I say I cou'd not say this, even to myself, *and all alone*, nor indeed, wou'd it have been true; I was never able in Justice, and with Truth, to say I was so wicked as that; but as Necessity first debauch'd me and Poverty made me a Whore at the Beginning; so excess of Avarice for getting Money, and excess of Vanity, continued me in the Crime, not being able to resist the Flatteries of Great Persons; being call'd the finest Woman in *France*, being caress'd by a Prince; and afterwards, I had Pride enough to expect, and Folly enough to believe, tho' indeed without ground, by a Great Monarch? These were my Baits, these the Chains by which the Devil held me bound: and by which I was indeed, too fast held for any Reasoning that I was then Mistress of, to deliver me from.

But this was all over now; Avarice cou'd have no Pretence, I was out of the reach of all that Fate could be suppos'd to do to reduce me; now I was so far from Poor, or the Danger of it that I had fifty Thousand Pounds in my Pocket at least—nay, I had the income of fifty Thousand Pounds, for I had 2500 l. a year coming in upon very good Land Security, besides 3 or 4000 l. in Money, which I kept by me for ordinary Occasions, and besides Jewels and Plate and Goods, which were worth near 5600 l. more; these put together, when I ruminated on it all in my Thoughts, as you may be sure I did often, added Weight still to the Question, as above, and it sounded continually in my Head, what's next? *What am I a Whore for now?*

It is true, this was, as I say, seldom out of my Thoughts, but yet it made no impressions upon me of that Kind which might be expected from a Reflection of so important a Nature, and which had so much of Substance and Seriousness in it.

But however, it was not without some little Consequences, even at that time, and which gave a little Turn to my Way of Living at first, as you shall hear in its Place.

But one particular thing interven'd besides this, which gave me some Uneasiness at this time, and made way for other things that follow'd. I have mentioned in several little Digressions, the Concern I had upon me for my Children, and in what Manner I had directed that Affair; I must go on a little with that Part, in order to bring the subsequent Parts of my Story together.

My Boy, the only Son I had left, that I had a legal Right to call Son, was, *as I have said*, rescued from the unhappy Circumstances of being Apprentice to a Mechanick, and was brought-up upon a new foot; but tho'

this was infinitely to his Advantage, yet it put him back near three Years in his coming into the World, for he had been near a Year at the Drudgery he was first put to, and it took up two Years more to form him for what he had Hopes given him he shou'd hereafter be, so that he was full 19 Years old, or rather 20 Years, before he came to be put-out as I intended; at the end of which time, I put him to a very flourishing *Italian* Merchant, and he again sent him to *Messina* in the Island of *Sicily*; and a little before the Juncture I am now speaking of, I had Letters from him, that is to say, Mrs. *Amy* had Letters from him, intimating that he was out of his Time, and that he had an Opportunity to be taken into an *English* House there, on very good terms, if his Support from hence might answer what he was bid to hope for; and so begg'd that what wou'd be done for him, might be so order'd that he might have it for his present Advancement, referring for the Particulars to his Master, the Merchant in *London*, who he had been put Apprentice to here; who, to cut the Story short, gave such a satisfactory Account of it, and of my Young-Man, to my steady and faithful Counsellor, Sir *Robert Clayton*, that I made no Scruple to pay 4000 l. which was 1000 l. more than he demanded, or rather propos'd, that he might have Encouragement to enter into the World better than he expected.

His Master remitted the Money very faithfully to him, and, finding by Sir *Robert Clayton*, that the young Gentleman, for so he call'd him, was well supported, wrote such Letters on his Account, as gave him a Credit at *Messina*, equal in Value to the Money itself.

I cou'd not digest it very well that I shou'd all this while conceal myself thus from my own Child, and make all this Favour due, in his Opinion, to a Stranger; and

yet I cou'd not find in my Heart to let my Son know what a Mother he had, and what a Life she liv'd, when at the same time that he must think himself infinitely oblig'd to me, he must be oblig'd, if he was a Man of Virtue, to hate his Mother and abhor the Way of Living, by which all the Bounty he enjoy'd was rais'd.

This is the Reason of mentioning this Part of my Son's Story, which is otherwise no-ways concerned in my History, but as it put me upon thinking how to put an End to that wicked Course I was in, that my own Child, when he shou'd afterwards come to *England* in a good Figure, and with the Appearance of a Merchant, shou'd not be asham'd to own me.

But there was another Difficulty which lay heavier upon me a great-deal, and that was my Daughter; who, as before, I had reliev'd by the Hands of another Instrument, which *Amy* had procur'd: The Girl, as I have mention'd, was directed to put herself into a good Garb, take Lodgings, and entertain a Maid to wait upon her, and to give herself some Breeding, that is to say, to learn to Dance and fit herself to appear as a Gentlewoman; being made to hope, that she shou'd, sometime or other, find that she shou'd be put into a Condition to support her Character, and to make herself amends for all her former Troubles; she was only charg'd not to be drawn into Matrimony, till she was secur'd of a Fortune that might assist to dispose of herself suitable not to what she then was, but what she was to be.

The Girl was too sensible of her Circumstances, not to give all possible Satisfaction of that Kind, and indeed, she was Mistress of too much Understanding, not to see how much she shou'd be oblig'd to that Part, for her own Interest.

It was not long after this, but being well equipp'd and in every-thing well set out, as she was directed, she came, as I have related above, and paid a Visit to Mrs. *Amy*, and to tell her of her good Fortune: *Amy* pretended to be much surpriz'd at the alteration, and overjoy'd for her sake, and began to treat her very well, entertain'd her handsomely, and, when she wou'd have gone away, pretended to ask my Leave, and sent my Coach home with her; and in short, learning from her where she lodg'd, which was in the City, *Amy* promis'd to return her Visit, and did so; and in a word, *Amy* and SUSAN (for she was my own Name) began an intimate Acquaintance together.

There was an inexpressible Difficulty in the poor Girl's way, or else I should not have been able to have forborne discovering myself to her, and this was, her having been a Servant in my particular Family; and I cou'd by no means think of ever letting the Children know what a kind of Creature they ow'd their Being to, or giving them an Occasion to upbraid their Mother with her scandalous Life, much less to justifie the like Practice from my Example.

Thus it was with me; and thus, no doubt, considering Parents always find it, that their own Children are a Restraint to them in their worst Courses, when the Sence of a Superior Power has not the same Influence: *But of that hereafter.*

There happen'd, however, one good Circumstance in the Case of this poor Girl, which brought about a Discovery sooner than otherwise it would have been, and it was thus: After she and *Amy* had been intimate for some time, and had exchange'd several Visits, the Girl now grown a Woman, talking to *Amy* of the gay things that us'd to fall-out when she was Servant in my Family,

spoke of it with a kind of Concern, that she cou'd not see (me) her Lady, and at last she adds, *'twas very strange*, Madam, *says she to Amy*, but tho' I liv'd near two Years in the House, I never saw my Mistress in my Life, except it was that publick night when she danc'd in the fine Turkish Habit, and then she was so disguis'd that I knew nothing of her afterwards.

Amy was glad to hear this; but as she was a cunning Girl from the beginning, she was not to be Bit, and so she laid no Stress upon that, at first, but gave me an Account of it; and I must confess it gave me a secret joy, to think that I was not known to her; and that, by virtue of that only Accident, I might, when other Circumstances made room for it, discover myself to her, and let her know she had a Mother in a Condition fit to be own'd.

It was a dreadful Restraint to me before, and this gave me some very sad Reflections and made way for the great Question I have mention'd above; and by how much the Circumstance was bitter to me, by so much the more agreeable it was, to understand that the Girl had never seen me, and consequently; did not know me again, if she was to be told who I was.

However, the next time she came to visit *Amy*, I was resolv'd to put it to a Tryal, and to come into the Room and let her see me, and to see by that, whether she knew me or not; but *Amy* put me by, lest indeed, as there was reason enough to question, I should not be able to contain, or forbear discovering myself to her; so it went off for that time.

But both these Circumstances, and that is the reason of mentioning them, brought me to consider of the Life I liv'd, and to resolve to put myself into some Figure of Life in which I might not be scandalous to my own Fam-

ily, and be afraid to make myself known to my own Children, who were my own Flesh and Blood.

There was another Daughter I had, which, with all our Enquiries, we cou'd not hear-of, high nor low, for several Years after the first: But I return to my own Story.

Being now in part remov'd from my old Station, I seem'd to be in a fair Way of retiring from my old Acquaintances, and consequently from the vile abominable Trade I had driven so long; so that the Door seem'd to be, as it were, particularly open'd to my Reformation if I had any-mind to it in earnest; but for all that, some of my old Friends, as I had us'd to call them, enquir'd me out, and came to visit me at *Kensington*, and that more frequently than I wish'd they would do; but it being once known where I was, there was no avoiding it, unless I would have downright refus'd and affronted them; and I was not yet in earnest enough with my Resolutions, to go that length.

The best of it was, my old lewd Favourite, whom I now heartily hated, entirely dropp'd me; he came once to visit me, but I caus'd *Amy* to deny me, and say I was gone out; she did it so oddly too, that when his Lordship went away, he said coldly to her, Well, well, Mrs. *Amy*, I find your Mistress does not desire to be seen; tell her I won't trouble her *any-more*, repeating the words *any-more* two or three times over, just at his going away.

I reflected a little on it at first, as unkind to him, having had so many considerable Presents from him; but, *as I have said*, I was sick of him, and that on some Accounts which, if I cou'd suffer myself to publish them, wou'd fully justify my Conduct; but that Part of the Story will not bear telling; so I must leave it, and proceed.

I had begun a little, *as I have said above*, to reflect upon my Manner of Living, and to think of putting a new Face upon it; and nothing mov'd me to it more than the Consideration of my having three Children, who were now grown up; and yet, that while I was in that Station of Life, I could not converse with them, or make myself known to them; and this gave me a great deal of Uneasiness; At last I enter'd into talk on this Part of it, with my Woman *Amy*.

We liv'd at *Kensington*, *as I have said*, and though I had done with my old wicked Lord —, as above, yet I was frequently visited, *as I said*, by some others, so that, in a word, I began to be known in the Town, not by my Name only, but by my Character too, which was worse.

It was one Morning when *Amy* was in-bed with me, and I had some of my dullest Thoughts about me, that *Amy*, hearing me sigh pretty often, ask'd me if I was not well. Yes, *Amy*, I am well enough, *says I*, but my mind is oppress'd with heavy Thoughts, and has been so a good while; and then I told her how it griev'd me that I could not make myself known to my own Children, or form any Acquaintances in the World. Why so? *says Amy*. Why, prithee, *Amy*, *says I*, what will my Children say to themselves, and to one another, when they find their Mother, however rich she may be, is at best but a Whore, a common Whore? And as for Acquaintance, prithee, *Amy*, what sober Lady, or what Family of any Character, will visit or be acquainted with a Whore?

Why, all that's true, Madam, *says Amy*, but how can it be remedy'd now? 'Tis true, *Amy*, said I, the thing cannot be remedy'd now, but the Scandal of it, I fancy, may be thrown off.

Truly, *says Amy*, I do not see how, unless you will go

Abroad again, and live in some other Nation where nobody has known us or seen us, so that they cannot say they ever saw us before.

That very Thought of *Amy* put what follows into my Head, and I return'd, Why, *Amy*, says *I*, is it not possible for me to shift my Being from this Part of the Town and go and live in another Part of the City, or another Part of the Country, and be as entirely conceal'd as if I had never been known?

Yes, says *Amy*, I believe it might, but then you must put off all your Equipages and Servants, Coaches and Horses, change your Liveries, nay, your own Cloaths, and, if it was possible, your very Face.

Well, says *I*, and that's the way, *Amy*, and that I'll do, and that forthwith; for I am not able to live in this Manner any longer: *Amy* came into this with a kind of Pleasure particular to herself, that is to say, with an Eagerness not to be resisted; for *Amy* was apt to be precipitant in her Motions, and was for doing it immediately: Well, says *I*, *Amy*, as soon as you will, but what Course must we take to do it? We cannot put off Servants and Coach and Horses and every-thing, leave off House-keeping, and transform ourselves into a new Shape, all in a moment; Servants must have Warning, and the Goods must be sold off, and a thousand things; and this began to perplexus, and in particular took us up two or three Days' Consideration.

At last, *Amy*, who was a clever Manager in such Cases, came to me with a Scheme, as she call'd it. I have found it out, Madam, says *she*; I have found a Scheme how you shall, if you have a-mind to it, begin and finish a perfect entire Change of your Figure and Circumstances in one day; and shall be as much unknown, Madam, in twenty-four Hours as you wou'd be in so many Years.

Come, *Amy*, says I, let us hear it, for you please me mightily with the Thoughts of it: Why, then, says *Amy*, let me go into the City this Afternoon, and I'll enquire out some honest, plain, sober Family, where I will take Lodgings for you as for a Country-Gentlewoman that desires to be in London for about half a Year, and to board Yourself and a Kinswoman, that is half a Servant, half a Companion; meaning myself, and so agree with them by the Month.

To this Lodging, (if I hit upon one to your mind) you may go to-Morrow Morning, in a Hackney-Coach, with no-body but me, and leave such Cloaths and Linnen as you think fit; but to be sure the plainest you have; and then you are remov'd at once, you need never so much as set your Foot in this House again (meaning where we then were) or see any-body belonging to it; in the meantime I'll let the Servants know that you are going over to *Holland* upon extraordinary Business, and will leave off your Equipages, and so I'll give them Warning, or, if they will accept of it, give them a Month's Wages; Then I'll sell off your Furniture as well as I can; as to your Coach, it is but having it new-painted and the Lining chang'd, and getting new Harness and Hammer-Cloths, and you may keep it still, or dispose of it as you think fit; And only take care to let this Lodging be in some remote Part of the Town, and you may be as perfectly unknown as if you had never been in *England* in your Life.

This was *Amy's* Scheme, and it pleas'd me so well that I resolv'd not only to let her go, but was resolv'd to go with her myself; but *Amy* put me off that, because, *she said*, she should have Occasion to hurry up-and-down so long, that if I was with her, it wou'd rather hinder than farther her; so I waived it.

In a word, *Amy* went, and was gone five long Hours; but when she came back I cou'd see by her Countenance, that her Success had been suitable to her Pains; for she came laughing, and gaping. Oh, Madam! says she, I have pleas'd you to the Life; and with that she tells me how she had fix'd upon a House in a Court in the *Minor-ies*; that she was directed to it meerly by Accident; that it was a Female Family, the Master of the House being gone to *New-England*, and that the Woman had four Children; kept two Maids, and liv'd very handsomely, but wanted Company to divert her; and that on that very account she had agreed to take Boarders.

Amy agreed for a good handsome Price, because she was resolv'd I should be us'd well; so she bargain'd to give her 35 l. for the Half-Year and 50 l. if we took a Maid, leaving that to my Choice; and that we might be satisfied we shou'd meet with nothing very gay; the People were QUAKERS, and I lik'd them the better.

I was so pleas'd, that I resolv'd to go with *Amy* the next Day to see the Lodgings, and to see the Woman of the House, and see how I lik'd them; but if I was pleas'd with the general, I was much more pleased with the particulars, for the Gentlewoman, I must call her so, tho' she was a QUAKER, was a most courteous, obliging, mannerly Person; perfectly well-bred, and perfectly well-humour'd, and, in short, the most agreeable Conversation that ever I met with; and which was worth all, so grave, and yet so pleasant and so merry, that 'tis scarce possible for me to express how I was pleas'd and delighted with her Company; and particularly, I was so pleas'd that I would go away no more; so I e'en took up my lodging there the very first Night.

In the mean-time, tho' it took up *Amy* almost a Month

so entirely, to put off all the Appearances of House-keeping, as above; it need take me up no Time to relate it; 'tis enough to say; that *Amy* quitted all that Part of the World and came Pack and Package to me, and here we took up our Abode.

I was now in a perfect Retreat indeed; remote from the Eyes of all that ever had seen me, and as much out of the way of being ever seen or heard-of by any of the Gang that us'd to follow me, as if I had been among the Mountains in *Lancashire*; for when did a Blue Garter or a Coach-and-Six come into a little narrow Passage in the *Minories*, or *Goodman's Fields*? And as there was no Fear of them, so really I had no Desire to see them, or so much as to hear from them any more as long as I liv'd.

I seem'd in a little Hurry while *Amy* came and went so every-Day, at first, but when that was over, I liv'd here perfectly retir'd, and with a most pleasant and agreeable Lady: I must call her so, for tho' a QUAKER, she had a full Share of good Breeding, sufficient to her, if she had been a Duchess; in a word, she was the most agreeable Creature in her Conversation, *as I said before*, that ever I met with.

I pretended, after I had been there some time, to be extremely in Love with the Dress of the QUAKERS, and this pleas'd her so much, that she wou'd needs dress me up one Day in a Suit of her own Cloaths; but my real Design was, to see whether it would pass upon me for a Disguise.

Amy was struck with the Novelty, tho' I had not mention'd my Design to her, and when the QUAKER was gone out of the Room, says *Amy*, I guess your Meaning; it is a perfect Disguise to you; why, you look quite another-body, I shou'd not have known you myself; nay,

says *Amy*, more than that, it makes you look ten Years younger than you did.

Nothing cou'd please me better than that; and when *Amy* repeated it I was so fond of it, that I asked my QUAKER (I won't call her Landlady, 'tis indeed too coarse a Word for her, and she deserv'd a much better)—I say, I ask'd her if she would sell it; I told her, I was so fond of it, that I wou'd give her enough to buy her a better Suit; she declin'd it at first, but I soon perceiv'd that it was chiefly in good Manners, because I shou'd not dishonour myself, as she call'd it, to put on her old Cloaths, but if I pleas'd to accept of them, she wou'd give me them for my dressing-Cloaths, and go with me, and buy a Suit for me, that might be better worth my wearing.

But as I convers'd in a very frank, open Manner with her, I bid her do the like with me; that I made no Scruples of such things; but that if she would let me have them, I wou'd satisfy her; so she let me know what they cost, and to make her amends I gave her three Guineas more than they cost her.

This good (tho' unhappy) QUAKER had the Misfortune to have had a bad Husband, and he was gone beyond-Sea; she had a good House, and well-furnish'd, and had some Jointure of her own Estate which supported her and her Children, so that she did not want; but she was not at-all above such a Help as my being there was to her; so she was as glad of me, as I was of her.

However, as I knew there was no way to fix this new Acquaintance, like making myself a Friend to her, I began with making her some handsome Presents, and the like to her Children; and first, opening my Bundles one Day in my Chamber, I heard her in another Room, and call'd her in with a kind of familiar way; there I show'd

her some of my fine Cloaths, and having among the rest of my things, a piece of very fine new Holland, which I had bought a little before, worth about 9s. an ell, I pull'd it out, *Here, my Friend*, says I, *I will make you a Present, if you will accept of it*; and with that I laid the Piece of Holland in her Lap.

I cou'd see she was surpriz'd, and that she cou'd hardly speak; *What dost thou mean?* says she; *indeed, I cannot have the face to accept so fine a Present as this*; adding, *'Tis fit for thy own Use, but 'tis above my Wear indeed*: I thought she had meant she must not wear it so fine, because she was a QUAKER, so I returned, Why, do not you QUAKERS wear fine Linnen neither? Yes, says she, we wear fine Linnen when we can afford it, but this is too good for me: However, I made her take it, and she was very thankful too; But my End was answer'd another Way, for by this I engag'd her so, that as I found her a Woman of Understanding and of Honesty too, I might upon any Occasion, have a Confidence in her, which was indeed, what I very much wanted.

By accustoming myself to converse with her, I had not only learnt to dress like a QUAKER, but so us'd myself to THEE and THOU that I talked like a QUAKER too, as readily and naturally as if I had been born among them; and, in a word, I pass'd for a QUAKER among all People that did not know me; I went but little Abroad, but I had been so used to a Coach that I knew not how well to go without one; besides, I thought it would be a further Disguise to me, so I told my Quaker Friend one day that I thought I liv'd too close, that I wanted Air; she proposed taking a Hackney-Coach sometimes or a Boat, but I told her I had always had a Coach of my own, till now, and I cou'd find in my Heart to have one again.

She seem'd to think it strange at first, considering how close I liv'd, but had nothing to say when she found that I did not value the Expence; so, in short, I resolv'd I would have a Coach. When we came to talk of Equipages; she extoll'd the having all things plain; I said so too; so I left it to her Direction, and a Coach-Maker was sent for, and he provided me a plain Coach, no gilding or painting, lin'd with a light-grey Cloath, and my Coachman had a Coat of the same, and no Lace on his Hat.

When all was ready, I dress'd myself in the Dress I bought of her, *and said*, Come, I'll be a QUAKER to-Day, and you and I'll go Abroad; which we did, and their was not a QUAKER in the town looked less like a Counterfeit than I did; But all this was my particular Plot to be the more completely conceal'd, and that I might depend upon being not known, and yet need not be confin'd like a Prisoner, and be always in Fear; so that all the rest was Grimace.

We liv'd here very easie and quiet, and yet I cannot say I was so in my Mind; I was like a Fish out of Water; I was as gay, and as young in my Disposition, as I was at five-and-twenty; and as I had always been courted, flatter'd, and used to love it, so I miss'd it in my conversation; and this put me many times upon looking-back upon things past.

I had very few Moments in my Life, which in their Reflection, afforded me any-thing but Regret; but of all the foolish Actions I had to look back upon in my Life, none look'd so preposterous, and so like Distraction, nor left so much Melancholly on my Mind, as my Parting with my Friend the *Merchant of Paris*, and the refusing him upon such honourable and just Conditions as he had offer'd; and tho' on his just (which I call'd unkind) re-

jecting, my Invitation to come to him again, I had look'd on him with some Disgust, yet now my Mind ran upon him continually, and the ridiculous Conduct of my refusing him, and I cou'd never be satisfied about him; I flatter'd myself, that if I cou'd but see him I could yet Master him, and that he wou'd presently forget all that had pass'd, that might be thought unkind; but as there was no room to imagine any-thing like that to be possible, I threw those Thoughts off again as much as I cou'd.

However, they continually return'd, and I had no Rest Night or Day for thinking of him who I had forgot above eleven Years. I told *Amy* of it, and we talk'd it over sometimes in-Bed, almost whole Nights together; at last, *Amy* started a thing of her own Head, which put it in a Way of Management, tho' a wild one too: *You are so uneasie, Madam, says she, about this Mr. — the Merchant at Paris; Come, says she, if you'll give me Leave, I'll go over, and see what's become of him.*

Not for ten Thousand Pounds, *said I*; no, nor if you met him in the Street, not to offer to speak to him on my Account: No, *says Amy*, I would not speak to him at-all, or if I did, I warrant you it shall not look to be upon your Account; I'll only enquire after him, and if he is in Being, you shall hear of him; if not, you shall hear of him still, and that may be enough.

Why, *says I*, if you will promise me not to enter into any-thing relating to me, with him; nor to begin any Discourse at-all unless he begins it with you, I cou'd almost be perswaded to let you go and try.

Amy promis'd me all that I desir'd, and in a word, to cut the Story short, I let her go; but ty'd her up to so many Particulars, that it was almost impossible her going cou'd signifie any-thing; and had she intended to ob-

serve them; she might as well have staid at home as have gone; for I charg'd her, if she came to see him, she shou'd not so much as take Notice that she knew him again; and if he spoke to her, she shou'd tell him she was come away from me a great-many Years ago, and knew nothing what was become of me; that she had been come over to *France* six Years ago, and was marry'd there and liv'd at *Calais*, or to that Purpose.

Amy promis'd me nothing indeed; for, *as she said*, it was impossible for her to resolve what wou'd be fit to do, or not to do, till she was there, upon the Spot, and had found out the Gentleman, or heard of him; but that then, if I would trust her, as I had always done, she wou'd answer for it, that she wou'd do nothing but what shou'd be for my Interest, and what she wou'd hope I should be very well pleas'd with.

With this general Commission, *Amy*, notwithstanding she had been so frighted at the Sea, ventured her Carcass once more by Water, and away she goes to *France*. She had four Articles of Confidence in Charge to enquire after, for me; and, as I found by her, she had one for herself; I say, four for me, because tho' her *first* and principal Errand was, to inform herself of my *Dutch* Merchant; yet I gave her in Charge to enquire, 2, After my Husband, who I left a trooper in the Gensd'arms. 3. After that Rogue of a *Jew*, whose very Name I hated, and of whose Face I had such a frightful *Idea*, that *Satban* himself cou'd not counterfeit a worse; and *Lastly*, after my Foreign Prince: And she discharg'd herself very well of them all, though not so successful as I wish'd.

Amy had a very good Passage over the Sea, and I had a Letter from her from *Calais*, in three Days after she went from *London*. When she came to *Paris*, she wrote me an

Account, that as to her first and most important Enquiry, which was after the *Dutch Merchant*; her Account was, That he had return'd to *Paris*; liv'd three years there, and, quitting that City, went to live at *Roan*; So away goes *Amy* for *Roan*.

But as she was going to bespeak a Place in the Coach to *Roan*, she meets very accidentally in the Street, with her Gentleman, *as I call'd him*; that is to say, the Prince de——'s Gentleman, who had been her Favourite, *as above*.

You may be sure there were several other kind Things happen'd between *Amy* and him, as you shall hear afterwards: But the two main things were, 1. That *Amy* enquir'd about his Lord, and had a full Account of him; of which presently; and in the next Place, telling him whither she was going, and for what; he bade her not go yet, for that he wou'd have a particular Account of it the next Day, from a Merchant that knew him; and accordingly he brought her word the next Day, that he had been for six Years before that gone for *Holland*, and that he liv'd there still.

This, *I say*, was the first News from *Amy*, for some time—I mean, about my Merchant: in the meantime, *Amy*, *as I have said*, enquir'd about the other Persons she had in her Instructions: As for the Prince, the Gentleman told her, he was gone into *Germany*, where his Estate lay, and that he liv'd there; that he had made great Enquiry after me, that he (his Gentleman) had made all the Search he had been able, for me; but that he cou'd not hear of me; that he believ'd if his Lord had known I had been in *England*, he wou'd have gone over to me; but that, after long Enquiry, he was oblig'd to give it over; but that he verily believ'd, if he could have found me; he

would have married me; and that he was extremely concern'd that he cou'd hear nothing of me.

I was not at all satisfied with *Amy's* Account, but order'd her to go to *Roan* herself; which she did, and there with much Difficulty (the Person she was directed to being dead) I say, with much Difficulty, she came to be inform'd that my Merchant had liv'd there two Years or something more; but that having met with a very great Misfortune, he had gone back to *Holland*, as the French Merchant said, where he had staid two Years; but with this Addition, viz. that he came back-again to *Roan* and liv'd in good Reputation there another Year; and afterwards, he was gone to *England*, and that he liv'd in *London*; But *Amy* cou'd by no means learn how to write to him there, till by great Accident an old Dutch Skipper, who had formerly serv'd him, coming to *Roan*, *Amy* was told of it; and he told her, that he lodged in *St. Lawrence Pountney's-Lane* in *London*, but was to be seen every Day upon the *Exchange*, in the *French Walk*.

This, *Amy* thought it was time enough to tell me of, when she came over; and besides she did not find this Dutch Skipper, till she had spent four or five Months, and been again at *Paris*, and then come back to *Roan* for further Information: But in the mean time she wrote me from *Paris*, that he was not to be found by any means; that he had been gone from *Paris* seven or eight Years; that she was told he had liv'd at *Roan* and she was a-going thither to enquire, but that she had heard afterwards that he was gone also from thence to *Holland*, so she did not go.

This, I say, was *Amy's* first Account; and I, not satisfied with it, had sent her an Order to go to *Roan* to enquire there also, as above.

While this was negotiating, and I received these Accounts from *Amy* at several times, a strange Adventure happen'd to me which I must mention just here; I had been Abroad to take the Air, as usual, with my QUAKER, as far as *Epping Forest*, and we were driving back towards *London*; when on the Road between *Bow* and *Mile-End*, two Gentlemen on Horseback came riding-by, having over-taken the coach and pass'd it, and went forward towards *London*.

They did not ride apace, though they pass'd the Coach, for we went very softly, nor did they look into the Coach at-all, but rode side by side, earnestly talking to one another, and inclining their Faces side-ways a little towards one another, he that went nearest the Coach, with his Face from it, and he that was furthest from the Coach, with his Face towards it, and passing in the very next Track to the Coach, I could hear them talk *Dutch* very distinctly; but it is impossible to describe the Confusion I was in when I plainly saw that the farthest of the two, him whose Face look'd towards the Coach, was my Friend the *Dutch Merchant of Paris*.

If it had been possible to conceal my Disorder from my Friend the QUAKER, I would have done it, but I found she was too well acquainted with such things, not to take the Hint; dost Thou understand *Dutch*? said she. *Why?* said I. *Why,* says she, 'tis easie to suppose that thou art a little concern'd at somewhat those men say; I suppose they are talking of thee: Indeed, my good friend, said I, thou art mistaken this time, for I know very well what they are talking of, but 'tis all about Ships, and Trading Affairs: Well, says she, then one of them is a Man-Friend of Thine, or somewhat is the Case, for tho' thy Tongue will not confess it, thy Face does.

I was going to have told a bold Lye and said, I knew nothing of them, but I found it was impossible to conceal it, so *I said*, indeed, I think I know the farthest of them; but I have neither spoken to him, nor so much as seen him for above 11 Years. Well, then, *says she*, Thou hast seen him with more than common Eyes, when thou didst see him; or else seeing him now would not be such a Surprise to Thee: Indeed, *said I*, 'tis true I am a little surpriz'd at seeing him just now, for I thought he had been in quite another Part of the World, and I can assure you, I never saw him in *England* in my Life: Well then, 'tis the more likely he is come over now on purpose to seek Thee. No, no, *said I*, Knight-Errantry is over, Women are not so hard to come at, that Men should not be able to please themselves without running from one Kingdom to another. Well, well, *says she*, I would have him see thee for all that, as plainly as Thou hast seen him. No, but he shan't, *says I*, for I am sure he don't know me in this Dress, and I'll take care he shan't see my Face, if I can help it; so I held up my Fan before my Face, and she saw me resolute in that, so she pressed me no further.

We had several Discourses upon the Subject, but still I let her know I was resolv'd he should not know me; but at last I confess'd so much, that tho' I would not let him know who I was, or where I liv'd, I did not care if I knew where he liv'd and how I might enquire about him: She took the hint immediately, and her servant being behind the Coach, she call'd him to the coach-side and bade him keep his Eye upon that Gentleman, and as soon as the Coach came to the End of *White-Chapel* he should get down, and follow him closely, so as to see where he put up his Horse, and then to go into the Inn and enquire, if he could, who he was and where he liv'd.

The Fellow follow'd diligently to the Gate of an Inn in *Bishopsgate Street*, and seeing him go in, made no doubt but that he had him fast, but was confounded, when upon Enquiry he found the Inn was a Thorowfare into another Street, and that the two Gentlemen had only rode thorow the Inn as the Way to the Street where they were going, and so, in short, came back no wiser than he went.

My kind QUAKER was more vex'd at the Disappointment, at least apparently so, than I was; and asking the Fellow if he was sure he knew the Gentleman again if he saw him, the Fellow said he had follow'd him so close, and took so much Notice of him, in order to do his Errand as it ought to be done, that he was very sure he should know him again; and that, besides, he was sure he should know his Horse.

This Part was, indeed, likely enough; and the kind QUAKER, without telling me any-thing of the Matter, caus'd her Man to place himself just at the corner of *Whitechappel-Church-Wall* every *Saturday* in the Afternoon, that being the day when the Citizens chiefly ride Abroad to take the Air; and there to watch all the Afternoon, and look for him.

It was not till the fifth *Saturday*, that her Man came, with a great deal of Joy, and gave her an Account, that he had found out the Gentleman; that he was a *Dutchman*, but a *French Merchant*; that he came from *Roan*, and his Name was —, and that he lodg'd at Mr. — on *Lawrence Pountney's Hill*. I was surpriz'd, you may be sure, when she came and told me one Evening, all the Particulars, except that of having set her Man to watch; I have found out thy *Dutch Friend*, says she, and can tell THEE how to find him too; I colour'd again as red as Fire: Then THOU hast dealt with the Evil One, Friend,

said I very gravely: No, no, says she, I have no Familiar; but I tell Thee I have found him for Thee, and his Name is so-and-so, and he lives as above recited.

I was surpriz'd again at this, not being able to imagine how she shou'd come to know all this; However, to put me out of Pain she told me what she had done; well, said I, Thou art very kind, but this is not worth thy Pains; for now I know it, 'tis only to satisfy my Curiosity, for I shall not send to him upon any Account. Be that as thou wilt, says she; besides, added she, Thou art in the right to say so to me, for why shou'd I be trusted with it? tho' if I were, I assure thee, I shou'd not betray thee: That is very kind, said I, and I believe thee; and assure thy self, if I do send to him, Thou shalt know it, and be trusted with it too.

During this Interval of five Weeks, I suffer'd a hundred Thousand Perplexities of Mind; I was thoroughly convinc'd I was right as to the Person, that it was the Man; I knew him so well, and saw him so plain, I could not be deceiv'd. I drove out again in the Coach (*on Pretence of air*), almost every-Day, in hopes of seeing him again, but was never so lucky as to see him; and now I had made the Discovery, I was as far to seek what Measures to take, as I was before.

To send to him, or speak to him first, if I should see him, so as to be known to him, that I resolv'd not to do, if I dy'd for it; to watch him about his Lodging, that was as much below my Spirit as the other; so that, *in a word*, I was at a perfect Loss how to act, or what to do.

At length came Amy's Letter, with the last Account which she had at *Roan* from the *Dutch* Skipper, which, confirming the other, left me out of Doubt that this *was my Man*; but still, no human Invention cou'd bring me to

the Speech of him, in such a manner as wou'd suit with my Resolutions; for, *after all*, how did I know what his Circumstances were? whether marry'd or single? and if he had a Wife, I know he was so honest a Man, he wou'd not so much as converse with me, or so much as know me, if he met me in the Street.

In the next Place, as he had entirely neglected me, which, in short, is the worst Way of slighting a Woman, and had given no Answer to my Letters, I did not know but he might be the same Man still; so I resolv'd that I cou'd do nothing in it unless some fairer Opportunity presented, which might make my Way clearer to me; for I was determin'd he shou'd have no room to put any more Sights upon me.

In these Thoughts I pass'd away near three Months, till at last (being impatient) I resolv'd to send for *Amy* to come Over, and tell her how things stood, and that I wou'd do nothing till she came; *Amy* in Answer, sent me word, she wou'd come away with all speed, but begg'd of me that I would enter into no Engagement with him, or any-body till she arriv'd; but still keeping me in the dark, as to the thing itself, which she had to say, at which I was heartily vex'd, for many Reasons.

But while all these things were transacting, and Letters and Answers pass'd between *Amy* and I a little slower than usual, at which I was not so well pleas'd as I used to be with *Amy's* Dispatch; I say in this time the Following Scene open'd.

It was one Afternoon, about four a'-clock, my Friendly Q U A K E R and I sitting in her Chamber upstairs, and very cheerful, chatting together (*for she was the best Company in the world*), when somebody ringing hastily at the Door, and no Servant just then in the way, she ran down

herself to the Door; when a Gentleman appears with a Footman attending, and making some Apologies, which she did not thoroughly understand, he speaking but broken *English*; he ask'd to speak with me by the very same Name that I went by in her House; which, *by the way*, was not the Name that he had known me by. †

She with very civil Language, *in her way*, brought him into a very handsome Parlour below-stairs, *and said*, she wou'd go and see whether the Person who lodg'd in her House own'd that Name, and he shou'd hear further.

I was a little surpriz'd even before I knew any-thing of who it was, my Mind foreboding the thing as it happen'd (*whence that arises, let the Naturalists explain to us*), but I was frighted, and ready to die, when my QUAKER came up all gay, and crowing; *There*, says she, *is the Dutch French Merchant come to see Thee*. I cou'd not speak one Word to her, nor stir off my Chair, but sat as motionless as a Statue. She talk'd a thousand pleasant things to me, but they made no impression on me; at last she pull'd me and teiz'd me. *Come, come*, says she, *be thyself, and rouse up*, I must go down again to him; what shall I say to him? Say, *said I*, that you have no such-body in the House: That I cannot do, *says she, because it is not the truth*; besides, I have own'd thou art above; *Come, come, go down with me*; Not for a thousand Guineas, *said I*. Well, *says she*, I'll go and tell him Thou wilt come quickly; so, without giving me Time to answer her, away she goes.

A Million of Thoughts circulated in my Head while she was gone, and what to do I cou'd not tell; I saw no Remedy but I must speak with him, but would have given 500 l. to have shun'd it; yet, had I shun'd it, perhaps then I would have given 500 l. again that I had seen him: Thus fluctuating, and unconcluding were my

Thoughts, what I so earnestly desir'd, I declin'd when it offer'd itself; and what now I pretended to decline, was nothing but what I had been at the expense of 40 or 50 l. to send *Amy* to *France* for; and even without any View, or indeed any rational Expectation, of bringing it to pass; and what, for half a Year before, I was so uneasie about, that I cou'd not be quiet Night or Day, till *Amy* propos'd to go over to enquire after him: In short, my Thoughts were all confus'd and in the utmost Disorder; I had once refus'd and reject'd him, and I repented it heartily; then I had taken ill his Silence, and in my Mind reject'd him again, but had repented that too: Now I had stoop'd so low as to send after him into *France*, which if he had known, perhaps, he had never come after me; and shou'd I reject him a third time! On the other-hand, he had repented too in his Turn, perhaps, and not knowing how I had acted, either in stooping to send in Search after him, or in the wickeder Part of my Life, was come over hither to seek me again; and I might take him perhaps, with the same Advantages as I might have done before, and wou'd I now be backward to see him! Well, while I was in this Hurry, my Friend the QUAKER comes up again, and, perceiving the Confusion I was in, she runs to her Closet and fetch'd me a little pleasant Cordial, but I *wou'd not taste it*: O, says she, *I understand Thee, be not uneasie, I'll give thee something shall take off all the Smell of it; if he kisses Thee a thousand times, he shall be no wiser*; I thought with myself, Thou art perfectly acquainted with Affairs of this Nature, I think you must govern me now, so I began to incline to go down with her; upon that, I took the Cordial, and she gave me a kind of spicy Preserve after it, whose Flavour was so strong, and yet so deliciously pleasant, that it wou'd cheat the nicest

Smelling, and it left not the least taint of the Cordial on the Breath.

Well, after this (*tho' with some Hesitation still*) I went down a Pair of Back-Stairs with her and into a Dining-Room, next to the Parlour in which he was, but there I halted, and desir'd she wou'd let me consider of it a little: *Well, do so*, says she, and left me with more readiness than she did before; *do, consider, and I'll come to Thee again.*

Tho' I hung back with an awkwardness that was really unfeign'd, yet when she so readily left me; I thought it was not so kind, and I began to think she should have press'd me still on to it; so foolishly backward are we, to the thing, which of all the World we most desire; mocking ourselves with a feign'd Reluctance when the Negative wou'd be Death for us; but she was too cunning for me, for while I, as it were, blam'd her in my Mind for not carrying me to him, tho' at the same time I appear'd backward to see him; on a sudden she unlocks the Folding-Doors which look'd into the next Parlour, and throwing them open, *There*, says she, (ushering him in) *is the Person who, I suppose, thou enquireth for*; and the same Moment, with a kind Decency she retir'd, and that so swift, that she would not give us leave, hardly to know which Way she went.

I stood up, but was confounded with a sudden Enquiry in my Thoughts, how I shou'd receive him? and with a Resolution as swift as Lightning, in Answer to it, *said to myself*, It shall be COLDLY; so, on a sudden I put on an Air of Stiffness and Ceremony, and held it for about two Minutes; but it was with great Difficulty.

He restrain'd himself too, on the other hand, came towards me gravely, and saluted me in form; but it was, it

seems, upon his supposing the QUAKER was behind him, whereas she, *as I said*, understood things too well, and had retir'd, as if she had vanish'd, that we might have full Freedom; for, *as she said afterwards*, she suppos'd we had seen one-another before, tho' it might have been a great-while ago.

Whatever Stiffness I had put on my Behaviour to him, I was surpriz'd in my Mind and angry at his, and began to wonder what kind of a ceremonious Meeting it was to be: However, after he perceiv'd the Woman was gone, he made a kind of a Hesitation, looking a little round him; *Indeed*, said he, *I thought the Gentlewoman was not withdrawn*, and with that, he took me in his Arms, and kiss'd me three or four times; but I, that was prejudic'd to the last Degree, with the coldness of his first Salutes when I did not know the Cause of it, could not be thorowly clear'd of the Prejudice, tho' I did know the Cause; and thought that even his return, and taking me in his Arms, did not seem to have the same Ardour with which he us'd to receive me, and this made me behave to him awkwardly, *and I know not how*, for a good while; *but this by the way*.

He began with a kind of Ecstasie upon the Subject of his finding me out; how it was possible that he shou'd have been four Years in *England*, and had us'd all the Ways imaginable, and cou'd never so much as have the least Intimation of me or of any-one like me; and that it was now above two Years that he had despair'd of it, and had given over all Enquiry; and that now he shou'd chop upon me, as it were, unlook'd and unsought-for.

I cou'd easily have accounted for his not finding me if I had but set down the Detail of my real Retirement, but I gave it a new, and indeed a truly hypocritical Turn; I

told him, that any-one that knew the manner of Life I led, might account for his not finding me; that the Retreat I had taken up, wou'd have render'd it a hundred Thousand to one odds that he ever found me at all; that as I had abandon'd all Conversation; taken up another Name; liv'd remote from *London*, and had not preserv'd one Acquaintance in it; it was no wonder he had not met with me; that even my Dress wou'd let him see that I did not desire to be known by any-body.

Then he ask'd if I had not receiv'd some Letters from him? I told him, No, he had not thought fit to give me the Civility of an Answer to the last I wrote to him: and he cou'd not suppose I should expect a Return, after a Silence in a Case where I had laid myself so low, and expos'd myself in a Manner I had never been us'd to; that indeed, I had never sent for any Letters after that, to the Place where I had order'd his to be directed; and that being so justly, as I thought, punish'd for my Weakness, I had nothing to do, but to repent of being a Fool, after I had strictly adher'd to a just Principle before: That however, as what I did was rather from Motions of Gratitude, than from real Weakness, however it might be construed by him, I had the Satisfaction in myself of having fully discharg'd the Debt: *I added*, that I had not wanted Occasions of all the seeming Advancements which the pretended Felicity of a Married-Life was usually set-off with, and might have been what I desir'd not to name; but that, however low I had stoop'd to him, I had maintain'd the Dignity of Female Liberty, against all the Attacks, either of Pride or Avarice; and that I had been infinitely oblig'd to him for giving me an Opportunity to discharge the only Obligation that endanger'd me, without subjecting me to the Consequence; and that I hop'd he was

satisfied I had paid the Debt, by offering myself to be chain'd, but was infinitely Debtor to him another way, for letting me remain free.

He was so confounded at this Discourse, that he knew not what to say, and for a good-while he stood mute indeed; but, recovering himself a little, *he said*, I run-out into a Discourse he hop'd was over, and forgotten, and he did not intend to revive it; that he knew I had not had his Letters, for that, when he first came to *England*, he had been at the Place to which they were directed, and found them all lying there, but one; and that the People had not known how to deliver them; that he thought to have had a Direction there, how to find me, but had the Mortification to be told, that they did not so much as know who I was; that he was under a great Disappointment, and that I ought to know, *in Answer to all my resentments*, that he had done a long, and (he hop'd) a sufficient Penance for the Slight *that I had suppos'd* he had put upon me; that it was true (*and I cou'd not suppose any other*) that upon the Repulse I had given him in a Case so circumstanc'd as his was, and after such earnest Entreaties, and such Offers as he had made me, he went away with a Mind heartily griev'd, and full of Resentment; that he had look'd back on the Crime he had committed, with some Regret, but on the Cruelty of my Treatment of the poor Infant I went with at that time, with the utmost Detestation; and that this made him unable to send an agreeable Answer to me; for which Reason he had sent none-at all for some time; but that in about six or seven Months, those Resentments wearing off by the return of his Affection to me and his Concern in the poor Child—*there he stopp'd, and indeed, Tears stood in his Eyes, while in a Parenthesis, he only added, and to this*

Minute he did not know whether it was dead or alive; he then went on, those Resentments wearing off; he sent me several Letters, *I think he said*, seven or eight, but receiv'd no Answer; that then his Business obliging him to go to *Holland*, he came to *England*, as in his Way, but found, *as above*, that his Letters had not been call'd for, but that he left them at the House after paying the Postage of them; and then going back to *France*, he was yet, uneasie, and cou'd not refrain the Knight-Errantry of coming to *England* again to seek me, tho' he knew neither where, or of who, to enquire for me, being disappointed in all his Enquiries before: That he had yet taken up his Residence here, firmly believing, that one-time or other he shou'd meet me, or hear of me, and that some kind Chance would at last throw him in my Way; that he had liv'd thus above four Years, and tho' his Hopes were vanish'd, yet he had not any Thoughts of removing any more in the World, unless it shou'd be at last, as it is with other old Men, he might have some Inclination to go Home, to die in his own Country, but that he had not thought of it yet; that if I wou'd consider all these Steps, I would find some Reasons to forget his first Resentments, and to think that Pennance, *as he call'd it*, which he had undergone in search of me, an *Amende Honorable*, in Reparation of the Affront given to the Kindness of my Letter of Invitation; and that we might at last make ourselves some Satisfaction on both sides, for the Mortifications past.

I confess I cou'd not hear all this without being mov'd very much, and yet I continued a little stiff and formal too, a good-while: *I told him*, that before I cou'd give him any Reply to the rest of his Discourse, I ought to give him the Satisfaction of telling him, *that his Son was alive*;

and that indeed, since I saw him so concern'd about it, and mention it with such Affection, I was sorry that I had not found out some Way or other to let him know it sooner; but that I thought, after his slighting the Mother, *as above*, he had summ'd up his Affection to the Child, in the Letter he had wrote to me about providing for it; and that he had, as other Fathers often do, look'd upon it as a Birth, *which being out of the Way*, was to be forgotten, as its Beginning was to be repented of; that in providing sufficiently for it, he had done more than all such Fathers us'd to do, and might be well satisfied with it.

He answer'd me that he shou'd have been very glad if I had been so good, but to have given him the Satisfaction of knowing the poor unfortunate Creature was yet alive, and he wou'd have taken some Care of it upon himself, and particularly by owning it for a legitimate Child, which, where nobody had known to the contrary, wou'd have taken off the Infamy which wou'd otherwise cleave to it; and so the Child should not, *itself*, have known anything of its own Disaster; but that he fear'd it was now too late.

He added, that I might see by all his Conduct since that, what unhappy Mistake drew him into the thing at first; and that he wou'd have been very far from doing the injury to me or being instrumental to add *Une Misérable* (that was his Word) to the World, if he had not been drawn into it, by the Hopes he had of making me his own; but that, if it was possible to rescue the Child from the Consequences of its unhappy Birth, he hop'd I would give him leave to do it, and he wou'd let me see that he had both Means and Affection still to do it; and that, notwithstanding all the Misfortunes that had befallen him, nothing that belong'd to him, especially by a Mother, he

had such a Concern for, as he had for me, shou'd ever want what he was in a Condition to do for it.

I cou'd not hear this without being sensibly touch'd with it; I was asham'd that he shou'd show that he had more real Affection for the Child, tho' he had never seen it in his Life, than I that bore it; for indeed, I did not love the Child, nor love to see it; and though I had provided for it, yet I did it by *Amy's* hand, and had not seen it above twice in four years; being privately resolv'd that when it grew up, it shou'd not be able to call me mother.

However, *I told him*, the Child was taken Care of, and that he need not be anxious about it, unless he suspected, that I had less Affection for it than he, that had never seen it in his life; that he knew what I had promis'd him to do for it, *namely*, to give it the Thousand Pistoles which I had offer'd him, and which he had declin'd; that, *I assur'd him*, I had made my will, and that I had left it 5000 l. and the Interest of it till he shou'd come of Age, if I died before that time; that I wou'd still be as good as that to it; but if he had a-mind to take it from me, into his Government, I wou'd not be against it; and to satisfie him that I wou'd perform what I said, I wou'd cause the Child to be deliver'd to him, and the 5000 l. also for its Support; depending upon it, that he wou'd show himself a Father to it, by what I saw of his Affection to it, now.

I had observ'd that he had hinted two or three times in his Discourse, his having had *Misfortunes in the World*, and I was a little surpriz'd at the Expression, especially at the repeating it so often, but I took no Notice of that Part yet.

He thank'd me for my Kindness to the Child, with a Tenderness which show'd the Sincerity of all he had said

before; and which increas'd the Regret with which, *as I said*, I look'd back on the little Affection I had shew'd to the poor Child; *he told me*, he did not desire to take him from me, but so as to introduce him into the World as his own; which he cou'd still do, having liv'd absent from his other Children (for he had two Sons and a Daughter, which were brought up at *Nimeugen in Holland*, with a Sister of his) so long, that he might very well send another Son of ten Years old to be bred up with them; and suppose his Mother to be dead or alive, as he found Occasion; and that as I had resolv'd to do so handsomely for the Child, he would add to it something considerable, tho', having had some great Disappointments (repeating the Words), he cou'd not do for it as he wou'd otherwise have done.

I then thought myself oblig'd to take Notice of his having so often mention'd his having *met with Disappointments*; I told him, I was very sorry to hear he had met with any-thing afflicting to him in the World; that I wou'd not have any-thing belonging to me, add to his Loss, or weaken him in what he might do for his other Children; and that I wou'd not agree to his having the Child away, *tho' the Proposal was infinitely to the Child's Advantage*, unless he would promise me, that the whole Expense shou'd be mine; and that if he did not think 5000 l. enough for the Child, I wou'd give it more.

We had so much Discourse upon this, *and the old Affairs*, that it took up all our Time at his first Visit; I was a little importunate with him, to tell me how he came to find me out, but he put it off for that time; and only obtaining my Leave to visit me again, he went away; and indeed, my Heart was so full with what he had said already, that I was glad when he went away; sometimes I

was full of Tenderness and Affection for him, and especially when he express'd himself so earnestly and passionately about the Child; other times I was crowded with Doubts about his Circumstances; sometimes I was terrify'd with Apprehensions lest if I shou'd come into a close Correspondence with him, he shou'd any-way come to hear what kind of Life I had led at *Pall-Mall*, and in other places, and it might make me miserable afterwards; from which last Thought I concluded that I had better repulse him again, than receive him: All these Thoughts and many more, crowded in so fast, *I say*, upon me, that I wanted to give Vent to them, and get rid of him, and was very glad when he was gone away.

We had several Meetings after this, in which still we had so many Preliminaries to go through, that we scarce ever border'd upon the main Subject; once indeed, he said something of it, and I put it off with a kind of a Jest; alas! *says I*, those things are out of the Question now; 'tis almost two Ages since those things were talk'd between us, *says I*; you see I am grown an *Old Woman* since that: Another time he gave a little Push at it again, and I laugh'd again; *Why what dost thou talk of?* said I, in a formal way, *Dost thou not see I am turn'd QUAKER? I cannot speak of those things now:* *Why*, says he, the QUAKERS marry, as well as other People, and love one another as well; besides, *says he*, the QUAKER'S Dress does not ill become you; and so jested with me again, and so it went off for a third time; however, I began to be kind-to him in process of time, *as they call it*, and we grew very intimate; and if the following Accident had not un luckily interven'd, I had certainly married him, or consented to marry him, the very next time he had ask'd me.

I had long waited for a Letter from *Amy*, who it seems,

was just at that time gone to *Roan* the second time, to make her Enquiries about him; and I receiv'd a letter from her at this unhappy Juncture which gave me the following Account of my Business:

1. That for *my Gentleman*, whom I had now, *as I may say*, in my Arms, *she said*, he had been gone from *Paris*, *as I have hinted*, having met with some great Losses and Misfortunes; that he had been in *Holland* on that very Account, whither he had also carried his Children; that he was after that, settl'd for some time, at *Roan*; that she had been at *Roan*, and found there (by a mere accident), from a *Dutch Skipper*, that he was at *London*, had been there above three Years; that he was to be found upon the *Exchange*, on the *French Walk*; and that he lodg'd at *St. Lawrence Pountney's-Lane*, and the like;

So *Amy* said she suppos'd I might soon find him out; but that she doubted he was poor, and not worth looking after; This she did because of the next Clause, which the jade had most mind-to, on many Accounts.

2. That as to the Prince —, that, *as above*, he was gone into *Germany*, where his Estate lay; that he had quitted the *French Service*, and liv'd retir'd; that she had seen his Gentleman, who remain'd at *Paris*, to solicit his Arrears, &c.; That he had given her an Account how his Lord had employ'd him, to enquire for me, and find me out, *as above*, and told her what Pains* he had taken to find me; that he had understood that I was gone to *England*; that he once had Orders to go to *England* to find me; that his Lord had resolv'd, if he cou'd have found me, to have call'd me a *Countess*, and so have marry'd me, and have carry'd me into *Germany* with him; and that his Commission was still to

assure me, that the Prince wou'd marry me if I wou'd come to him; and that he wou'd send him an Account that he had found me, and did not doubt but he wou'd have Orders to come over to *England* to attend me, in a Figure suitable to my Quality.

Amy, an ambitious Jade, who knew my weakest Part, *namely*, that I lov'd great things, and that I lov'd to be flattered and courted, said abundance of kind things upon this Occasion, which she knew were suitable to me, and wou'd prompt my Vanity; and talk'd big of the Prince's Gentleman having Orders to come over to me, with a Procuration to marry me by Proxy (*as Princes usually do in like Cases*), and to furnish me with an Equipage and I know not how many fine things; but told me withal, that she had not yet let him know that she belong'd to me still, or that she knew where to find me, or to write to me; because she was willing to see the Bottom of it, and whether it was a Reality or a *Gasconade*; she had indeed, told him, that if he had any such Commission, she wou'd endeavour to find me out, but no more.

III. For the *Jew*, she assur'd me, that she had not been able to come at a Certainty what was become of him, or in what Part of the World he was; but that thus much she had learn'd from good-hands, that he had committed a Crime, in being concern'd in a design to rob a rich Banker at *Paris*; and that he was fled, and had not been heard-of there for above six Years.

IV. For that of *my Husband the Brewer*, she learn'd, that being commanded into the Field upon an Occasion of some Action in *Flanders*, he was wounded at the Battle of *Mons*, and died of his Wounds in the Hospital of the Invalids; so there was an End of my four Enquiries, which I sent her over to make.

This Account of the Prince, and the return of his Affection for me, with all the flattering great things which seem'd to come along with it; and especially as they came gilded, and set-out by my maid *Amy*; *I say*, this Account of the Prince came to me in a very unlucky Hour, and in the very Crisis of my Affair.

The Merchant and I had enter'd into close Conferences upon the grand Affair; I had left off talking my Platonicks, and of my Independency, and being a *Free Woman, as before*; and he having clear'd up my Doubts too, as to his Circumstances and the Misfortunes he had spoken of, I had gone so far, that we had begun to consider where we shou'd live, and in what Figure; what Equipage; what House, *and the like*.

I had made some Harangues upon the delightful Retirement of a Country-Life, and how we might enjoy ourselves so effectually, without the Incumbrances of Business, and the World; but all this was *Grimace*, and purely because I was afraid to make any publick Appearance in the World, for fear some impertinent Person of Quality shou'd chop upon again, and cry out, *Roxana, Roxana*, by —, with an Oath, *as had been done before*.

My Merchant, bred to Business and us'd to converse among Men of Business, cou'd hardly tell how to live without it; at least, it appear'd he should be like a Fish out of Water, uneasie and dying; but, however, he join'd with me, only argued, that we might live as near *London* as we cou'd; that he might sometimes come to 'Change and hear how the World shou'd go abroad, and how it far'd with his Friends, and his Children.

I answered, That if he chose still to embarrass himself with Business, I suppos'd it would be more to his Satisfaction to be in his own Country, and where his

Family was so well known, and where his Children also were.

He smil'd at the Thoughts of that, and let me know that he shou'd be very willing to embrace such an Offer, but that he cou'd not expect it of me, to whom *England* was, *to be sure*, so naturaliz'd now, as that it wou'd be carrying me out of my native Country, which he wou'd not desire by any means, however agreeable it might be to him.

I told him, he was mistaken in me; that as I had told him so much of a Married State being a Captivity, and the Family being a House of Bondage; that when I married, I expected to be but an Upper Servant; so if I did, notwithstanding, submit to it, I hop'd he should see I knew how to act the Servant's Part and do every-thing to oblige my Master; that if I did not resolve to go with him wherever he desir'd to go, he might depend I wou'd never have him; *And did I not*, said I, *offer myself to go with you to the East-Indies?*

All this while, this was indeed, but a Copy of my Countenance, for as my Circumstances wou'd not admit my stay in *London*, at least, not so as to appear publickly, I resolv'd, if I took him, to live remote in the Country, or go out of *England* with him.

But in an *evil Hour*, just now came *Amy's* Letter; in the very middle of all these Discourses; and the fine things she had said about the *Prince*, began to make strange Work with me; the Notion of being a *Princess* and going over to live where all that had happen'd here, wou'd have been quite sunk out of Knowledge, as well as out of Memory (*Conscience excepted*) was mighty taking; the Thoughts of being surrounded with Domesticks, honour'd with Titles, be call'd H E R H I G H N E S S ; and live

in all the Splendour of a Court; and, *which was still more*, in the Arms of a Man of such Rank, and who, I knew, lov'd and valued me; all this, *in a word*, dazzl'd my Eyes, turn'd my Head; and I was as truly craz'd and distracted for about a Fortnight as most of the People in *Bedlam*, tho' perhaps, not quite so far gone.

When my Gentleman came to me the next time, I had no Notion of him; I wish'd I had never receiv'd him at all; *in short*, I resolv'd to have no more to say to him, so I feign'd myself indispos'd; and tho' I did come down to him, and speak to him a little, yet I let him see that I was so ill, that I was (*as we say*) no Company, and that it wou'd be kind in him to give me Leave to quit him for that time.

The next Morning he sent a Footman to enquire how I did; and I let him know I had a violent Cold, and was very ill with it; two days after, he came again, and I let him see me again, but feign'd myself so hoarse that I cou'd not speak to be heard; and that it was painful to me but to whisper; and, *in a word*, I held him in this suspense near three Weeks.

During this time I had a strange Elevation upon my Mind; and the Prince, *or the Spirit of him*, had such a Possession of me that I spent most of this Time in the realizing all the Great Things of a *Life with the Prince*, to my mind; pleasing my Fancy with the Grandeur I was supposing myself to enjoy; and, withal, wickedly studying in what Manner to put off this Gentleman, and be rid of him for ever.

I cannot but say, that sometimes the Baseness of the Action struck hard with me; the Honour and Sincerity with which he had always treated me; and, *above all*, the Fidelity he had shew'd me at *Paris*, and that I ow'd my Life to him; *I say*, all these star'd in my Face; and I fre-

quently argued with myself upon the Obligation I was under, to him; and how base wou'd it be *now too, after so many Obligations and Engagements*, to cast him off?

But the Title of *Highbness*, and of a *Princess*, and all those fine things, as they came in, weigh'd down all this; *and the Sence of Gratitude vanish'd*, as if it *had been a Shadow*.

At other times, I consider'd the Wealth I was Mistress of; that I was able to live like a Princess, tho' not a princess; and that my Merchant (*for he had told me all the Affair of his Misfortune*) was far from being poor, or even mean; that together, we were able to make up an Estate of between three and four Thousand Pounds a Year, which was in itself, equal to some Princes abroad: But tho' this was true, yet the Name of *Princess* and the flutter of it, *in a word*, the Pride weigh'd 'em down; and all these Arguings generally ended to the Disadvantage of my Merchant; so that, *in short*, I resolv'd to drop him and give him a final Answer, at his next coming; *namely*, That something had happen'd in my Affairs which had caus'd me to alter my Measures, unexpectedly; and, *in a word*, to desire him to trouble himself no further.

I think, verily, this rude Treatment of him was for some time the Effect of a violent Fermentation in my Blood; for the very Motion which the steady Contemplation of my fancy'd Greatness had put my Spirits into, had thrown me into a kind of Fever, and I scarce knew what I did.

I have wonder'd since that it did not make me Mad; nor do I now think it strange, to hear of those, who have been quite Lunatick with their Pride; that fancy'd themselves Queens, and Empresses, and have made their Attendants serve them upon the Knee; given Visitors their

Hand to kiss, *and the like*; for certainly, if Pride will not turn the Brain, nothing can.

However, the next time my Gentleman came, I had not Courage enough, *or not Ill-Nature enough*, to treat him in the rude Manner I had resolv'd to do; and it was very well I did not, for soon after I had another Letter from *Amy*, in which was the mortifying News, and indeed surprizing to me, that my Prince (*as I with a secret Pleasure had call'd him*) was very much hurt by a Bruise he had receiv'd in hunting (and engaging with) a wild Boar; a cruel and desperate Sport, which the Noblemen of *Germany*, it seems, much delight in.

This alarm'd me indeed, and the more, because *Amy* wrote me word, that his Gentleman was gone away Express to him, not without Apprehensions, that he shou'd find his Master was dead, before his coming home; but that he (*the Gentleman*) had promis'd her that as soon as he arriv'd he wou'd send back the same Courier to her, with an Account of his Master's Health, and of the main Affair; and that he had oblig'd *Amy* to stay at *Paris* fourteen Days for his Return; she having promis'd him before to make it her Business to go to *England*, and to find me out for his Lord, if he sent her such Orders; and he was to send her a Bill for fifty Pistoles, for her Journey: So *Amy* told me she waited for the Answer.

This was a Blow to me several Ways; for, first, I was in a State of Uncertainty as to his Person, whether he was alive or dead, and I was not unconcern'd in that Part, I assure you; for I had an inexpressible Affection remaining for his Person, besides the Degree to which it was reviv'd by the View of a firmer Interest in him; *but this was not all*, for in losing him, I for ever lost the Prospect of all

the Gaiety and Glory that had made such an Impression upon my Imagination.

In this State of Uncertainty, *I say*, by *Amy's* Letter, I was like still, to remain another Fortnight, and had I now continued the Resolution of using my Merchant in the rude Manner I once intended, I had made, perhaps, a sorry Piece of Work of it indeed, and it was very well my Heart fail'd me, *as it did*.

However, I treated him with a great many Shuffles, and feign'd Stories to keep him off from any closer Conferences than we had already had, that I might act afterwards as Occasion might offer, one way or other: But that which mortified me most, was that *Amy* did not write, though the fourteen Days were expir'd; at last to my great Surprize, when I was, with the utmost Impatience looking out at the Window expecting the Postman, that usually brought the Foreign Letters; *I say* I was agreeably surpriz'd to see a Coach come to the yard-Gate where we liv'd, and my Woman, *Amy*, alight out of it, and come towards the Door, having the Coachman bringing several Bundles after her.

I flew like Lightning down-stairs to speak to her; but, was soon damp'd with her News: Is the Prince alive or dead, *Amy*? *says I*. She spoke coldly, and slightly: *He is alive, Madam*, said she, *but it is not much matter, I had as-lieu he had been dead*; So we went up-stairs again to my Chamber, and there we began a serious Discourse of the whole Matter.

First, *she told me a long Story* of his being hurt by a Wild-Boar, and of the Condition he was reduc'd to, so that every-one expected he shou'd die, the Anguish of the Wound having thrown him into a Fever; with abundance of Circumstances, too long to relate here; how he

recover'd of that extreme Danger, but continued very weak; how the Gentleman had been *Homme de Parole*, and had sent back the Courier, as punctually, as if it had been to the KING; that he had given a long Account of his Lord, and of his Illness, and Recovery; but the sum of the Matter, *as to me*, was, That as to the Lady, his Lord was turn'd Penitent; was under some Vows for his Recovery, and cou'd not think any-more on that Affair; and especially, the Lady being gone, and that it had not been offer'd to her, so there was no Breach of Honour; but that his Lord was sensible of the good Offices of Mrs. Amy, and had sent her the fifty Pistoles for her Trouble, as if she had really gone the Journey.

I was, *I confess*, hardly able to bear the first Surprise of this disappointment; Amy saw it, and gapes out (*as was her way*) *Lawd Madam!* never be concern'd at it; you see he is gotten among the Priests; and I suppose, they have saucily impos'd some Pennance upon him; and, *it maybe*, sent him off an Errand barefoot, to some *Madonna* or *Nostredame* or other; and he is off of his Amours for the present; I'll warrant you, he'll be as wicked again as ever he was, when he is got thorow-well and gets but out of their Hands again: I hate this out-o'-Season Repentance; what Occasion had he, in his Repentance, to be off of taking a good Wife? I shou'd have been glad to see you have been a Princess, *and all that*, but if it can't be, never afflict yourself, you are rich enough to be a princess to yourself; you don't want him, that's the best of it.

Well, I cry'd for-all that, and was heartily vex'd, and that a great-while; but as Amy was always at my Elbow, and always jogging it out of my Head, with her Mirth, and her Wit, it wore off again.

Then I told Amy all the Story of my Merchant, and

how he had found me out, when I was in such a Concern to find him; how it was true that he lodg'd in St. *Lawrence Pountney's-Lane*; and how I had had all the Story of his Misfortune, which she had heard of, in which he had lost above 8000*l.* Sterling; and that he had told me frankly of it, before she had sent me any Account of it, or, *at least*, before I had taken any Notice that I had heard of it.

Amy was very joyful at that Part; Well, Madam, then, says *Amy*, what need you value the Story of the Prince? and going I know not whither into *Germany*, to lay your Bones in another World, and learn the Devil's Language call'd *H I G H - D U T C H*? You are better here, by half, says *Amy*. Lawd, Madam! says *she*, why, are not you as rich as *Crassus*?

Well, it was a great-while still, before I could bring myself off of this fancy'd Sovereignty; and I that was so willing once to be Mistress to a King, was now ten thousand times more fond of being Wife to a Prince.

So fast a hold has Pride and Ambition upon our Minds, that when once it gets Admission, nothing is so chimerical, but under this Possession we can form *Ideas* of, in our Fancy, and realise to our Imagination: Nothing can be so ridiculous as the simple Steps we take in such Cases; a Man or a Woman becomes a mere *Malade Imaginaire*, and, I believe, may as easily die with Grief, or run-mad with Joy (as the Affair in his Fancy appears right or wrong), as if all was real, and actually under the Management of the Person.

I had indeed, two Assistants to deliver me from this Snare, and these were, *first*, *Amy*, who knew my Disease, but was able to do nothing as to the Remedy; the *second*, the Merchant, who really brought the Remedy, but knew nothing of the Distemper.

I remember, when all these Disorders were upon my Thoughts, in one of the Visits my Friend the Merchant made me, he took Notice that he perceiv'd I was under some unusual Disorder; he believ'd, *he said*, that my Distemper, *whatever it was*, lay much in my Head, and, it being Summer-Weather, and very hot, propos'd to me to go a little way into the Air.

I started at his Expression; what *says I*, do you think then, that *I am craz'd*? You shou'd then propose a Mad-House for my Cure: No, no, *says he*, I do not mean anything like that, I hope the Head may be distemper'd and not the Brain: Well, I was too sensible that he was right, for I knew I had acted a strange wild kind of Part with him; but he insisted upon it, and press'd me to go into the Country: *I took him short again*, What need you, *says I*, send me out of your Way? It is in your Power to be less troubled with me, and with less Inconveniencetous both.

He took that ill, and told me I us'd to have a better Opinion of his Sincerity, and desir'd to know what he had done to forfeit my Charity. I mention this, only to let you see how far I had gone in my Measures of quitting him, *that is to say*, how near I was of showing him how base, ungrateful, and how vilely I could act: But I found I had carried the Jest far enough, and that a little Matter might have made him sick of me again, as he was before; so I began, by little and little, to change my way of talking to him, and to come to Discourse to the Purpose again, as we had done before.

A while after this, when we were very merry, and talking familiarly together, he call'd me, with an Air of particular satisfaction, *his Princess*. I colour'd at the Word, *for it indeed touch'd me to the quick*; but he knew nothing of the Reason of my being touch'd with it: What d'ye mean

by that? *said I*. Nay, *says he*, I mean nothing but that you are a princess to me: Well, *says I*, as to that, I am content; and yet I cou'd tell you I might have been a Princess if I wou'd have quitted you, and believe I cou'd be so still: It is not in my Power to make you a Princess, *says he*, but I can easily make you a Lady, here in *England*, and a Countess too, if you will go out of it.

I heard both with a great-deal of Satisfaction, for my Pride remain'd, tho' it had been baulk'd, and I thought *with myself*, that this Proposal wou'd make me some Amends for the Loss of the Title that had so tickl'd my Imagination another-way; and I was impatient to understand what he meant; but I wou'd not ask him by any means; so it pass'd off for that time.

When he was gone, I told *Amy* what he had said, and *Amy* was as impatient to know the Manner, how it cou'd be, as I was; but the next time (*perfectly unexpected to me*) he told me, that he had accidentally mention'd a thing to me, last time he was with me, having not the least Thought of the thing itself; but not knowing but such a thing might be of some Weight to me, and that it might bring me Respect among People, where I might appear, he had thought since of it, and was resolv'd to ask me about it.

I made light of it, and told him, that as he knew I had chosen a retir'd Life, it was of no Value to me to be called C O U N T E S S or L A D Y either; but that if he intended to drag me, *as I might call it*, into the World again, perhaps it might be agreeable to him; but, *besides that*, I cou'd not judge of the thing, because I did not understand how either of them was to be done.

He told me, that Money purchas'd Titles of Honour in almost all Parts of the World; tho' money cou'd not

give Principles of Honour, they must come by Birth and Blood; that, however, Titles sometimes assist to elevate the soul, and to infuse generous Principles into the Mind, and especially, where there was a good Foundation laid in the Persons; that he hop'd we shou'd neither of us misbehave, if we came to it; and that as we knew how to wear a Title without undue Elevations, so it might sit as well upon us, as on another; that as to *England*, he had nothing to do but to get an Act of *Naturalization* in his Favour, and he knew where to purchase a Patent for BARONET, *that is to say*, to have the Honour and Title transferr'd to him; but if I intended to go Abroad with him, he had a Nephew, the Son of his Elder Brother, who had the Title of COUNT with the Estate annex'd, which was but small; and that he had frequently offer'd to make it over to him for a thousand Pistoles, which was not a great-deal of Money; and, considering it was in the Family already, he wou'd, upon my being willing, purchase it immediately.

I told him I lik'd the last best; but then I would not let him buy it, unless he wou'd let me pay the thousand Pistoles. No, No, *says he*, I refus'd a thousand Pistoles that I had more Right to have accepted, than that, and you shall not be at so much Expence now: Yes, *says I*, you did refuse it, and perhaps, repented it afterwards: I never complain'd, *says he*; But *I* did, *says I*, and often repented it for you: I do not understand you, *says he*: Why, *says I*, I repented that I suffer'd you to refuse it: Well, well, *said he*, we may talk of that hereafter, when you shall resolve which Part of the World you will make your settl'd Residence in: Here he talk'd very handsomely to me, and for a good while together; how it had been his Lot to live all his Days out of his Native Country, and to be often shift-

ing and changing the Situation of his Affairs, and that I myself had not always had a fixed abode; but that now, as neither of us was very Young, he fancy'd I would be for taking-up our Abode, where, *if possible*, we might remove no more; that as to his part, he was of that Opinion entirely, only with this Exception, that the Choice of the Place shou'd be mine; for, that all Places in the World were alike to him; only with this single Addition, *namely*, that I was with him.

I heard him with a great-deal of Pleasure, *as well* for his being willing to give me the Choice, as for that I resolv'd to live Abroad, for the Reason I have mention'd already, *namely*, lest I shou'd at anytime be known in *England*, and all that Story of *Roxana*, and the Balls, shou'd come out; as also I was not a little tickl'd with the Satisfaction of being still a *Countess*, tho' I could not be a *Princess*.

I told *Amy* all this Story, for she was still my Privy-Counsellor; but when I ask'd her Opinion, she made me laugh heartily: *Now, which of the two shall I take, Amy? said I. Shall I be a Lady, that is, a Baronet's Lady in England, or a Countess in Holland?* the ready-witted Jade, that knew the Pride of my Temper too, almost as well as did my-self, answer'd (without the least Hesitation) *both, Madam*; which of them! *says she, (repeating the Words)* why not both of them? and then you will be really a *Princess*; for sure, to be a Lady in *English*, and a Countess in *Dutch*, may make a Princess in *High-Dutch*: Upon the whole, tho' *Amy* was in jest, she put the Thought into my Head, and I resolv'd that, *in short*, I wou'd be both of them; which I manag'd as you shall hear.

First, I seem'd to resolve that I wou'd live and settle in *England*, only with this Condition, *namely*, that I wou'd

not live in *London*; I pretended that it wou'd choak me up; that I wanted breath when I was in *London*; but that any-where else I wou'd be satisfied; and then I ask'd him, whether any Sea-Port town in *England* wou'd not suit him? because I knew, tho' he seem'd to leave off, he wou'd always love to be among Business; and conversing with Men of Business; and I nam'd several Places, either nearest for Business with *France*, or with *Holland*; as *Dover*, or *Southampton* for the *first*; and *Ipswich*, or *Yarmouth*, or *Hull*, for the *last*; but I took care that we wou'd resolve upon nothing; only by this it seem'd to be certain, that we should live in *England*.

It was time now, to bring things to a Conclusion, and so in about six Weeks' time more, we settl'd all our Preliminaries; and among the rest, he let me know that he shou'd have the Bill for his *Naturalization* pass'd time enough; so that he wou'd be (as he call'd it) an *Englishman*, before we marry'd. That was soon perfected, the Parliament being then sitting, and several other Foreigners joining in the said Bill to save the Expence.

It was not above three or four Days after, but that, without giving me the least Notice that he had so much as been about the Patent for *Baronet*, he brought it me in a fine embroider'd bag, and, saluting me by the Name of my Lady —— (*joining his own Sirname to it*) presented it to me, with his Picture set with Diamonds; and at the same time, gave me a Breast-Jewel worth a thousand Pistoles, and the next Morning we were marry'd: Thus I put an End to all the intriguing Part of my Life; a Life full of prosperous Wickedness; the Reflections upon which, were so much the more afflicting, as the time had been spent in the grossest Crimes, which the more I look'd-back upon, the more black and horrid they ap-

pear'd, effectually drinking up all the Comfort and Satisfaction which I might otherwise have taken in that Part of Life which was still before me.

The first Satisfaction, however, that I took in the new Condition I was in, was in reflecting, that at length the Life of Crime was over; and that I was like a Passenger coming back from the *Indies*, who having, after many Years' Fatigues and Hurry in Business, gotten a good Estate with innumerable Difficulties and Hazards, is arriv'd safe at *London* with all his Effects, and has the Pleasure of saying, he shall never venture upon the Seas any more.

When we were marry'd we came back immediately to my Lodgings (*for the Church was but just-by*), and we were so privately marry'd, that none but *Amy* and my Friend the QUAKER, were acquainted with it: As soon as we came into the House, he took me in his Arms, and kissing me, *Now you are my own*, says he; O! that you had been so good to have done this eleven Years ago: Then, *said I*, you *perhaps* wou'd have been tir'd of me long ago; 'tis much better now; *for now* all our happy Days are to come; besides, *said I*, I shou'd not have been half so rich; but that I said to myself, for there was no letting him into the Reason of it: O! *says he*, I shou'd not have been tir'd of you; but besides having the Satisfaction of your Company, it had sav'd me that unlucky Blow at *Paris*, which was a dead Loss to me, of above 8000 Pistoles, and all the Fatigues of so many Years' Hurry and Business; and then *he added*, but I'll make you pay for it all, now I have you: I started a little at the Words: *Ay*, said I, *do you threaten already?* Pray what d'ye mean by that? *and began to look a little grave.*

I'll tell you, *says he*, very plainly what I mean, and still

he held me fast in his Arms. I intend from this time, never to trouble myself with any-more Business, so I shall never get one Shilling for you, more than I have already; all that you will lose one way; next, I intend not to trouble myself with any of the Care or Trouble of managing what either you have for me, or what I have to add to it; but you shall e'en take it all upon yourself, as the Wives do in *Holland*; so you will pay for it that-way too; for all the Drudgery shall be yours; thirdly, I intend to condemn to you the constant Bondage of my impertinent Company, for I shall tie you like a Pedlar's Pack, at my Back, I shall scarce ever be from you; for I am sure, I can take Delight in nothing else in this world: Very well, *says I*, but I am pretty heavy, I hope you'll set me down sometimes, when you are a-weary; as for that, *says he*, tire me if you can.

This was all Jest and Allegory, but it was all true, in the Moral of the Fable, as you shall hear in its place: We were very merry the rest of the Day, but without any Noise, or Clutter; for he brought not one of his Acquaintance, or Friends, either *English*, or Foreigner; The honest QUAKER provided us a very noble Dinner indeed, considering how few we were to eat it; and every Day that Week she did the like, and wou'd at last have it be all at her own Charge, which I was utterly averse to; *first*, because I knew her Circumstances not to be very great, tho' not very low; *and next*, because she had been so true a Friend, and so chearful a Comforter to me, *ay, and Counsellor too*, in all that Affair, that I had resolv'd to make her a Present, that shou'd be some Help to her when all was over.

But to return to the Circumstances of our Wedding; after being very merry, *as I have told you*, Amy and the

QUAKER, put us to-bed, the honest QUAKER little-thinking we had been *a-Bed together* eleven Years before; nay, that was a Secret which, *as it happen'd*, Amy herself did not know: Amy grinn'd, and make Faces as if she had been pleas'd; but it came out in so many Words, when he was not by, the sum of her Mumbling and Muttering was, that this shou'd have been done ten or a dozen Years before; that it would signifie little now; *that was to say, in short*, that her Mistress was pretty near Fifty, and too old to have any Children; I chid her; the QUAKER laugh'd, complimented me upon my not being so old as Amy pretended; that I cou'd not be above Forty, and might have a Houseful of Children yet; but Amy, and I too, knew better than she, how it was; for, *in short*, I was old enough to have done breeding, however I look'd; but I made her hold her Tongue.

In the Morning my QUAKER Landlady came and visited us, before we were up, and made us eat Cakes, and drink Chocolate in-Bed, and then left us again, and bid us take a Nap upon it, which I believe we did; *in short*, she treated us so handsomely, and with such an agreeable Chearfulness, as well as plenty, as made it appear to me, that QUAKERS may, and that this QUAKER did, understand Good-Manners as well as any other people.

I resisted her Offer, *however*, of treating us for the whole Week, and I oppos'd it so long, that I saw evidently that she took it ill, and wou'd have thought herself slighted, if we had not accepted it; so I said no more, but let her go on, only told her I wou'd be even with her, *and so I was*: However, for that Week she treated us, *as she said she wou'd*, and did it so very fine, and with such a Profusion of all sorts of good things, that the greatest Burthen to her was, how to dispose of things that were left; for she never

let any-thing, how dainty, or however large, be so much as seen twice among us.

I had some Servants indeed which help'd her off a little; *that is to say*, two Maids, for *Amy* was now a Woman of Business, not a Servant, and ate always with us; I had also, a Coachman, and a Boy; my QUAKER had a Man-Servant too, but had but one Maid; but she borrow'd two more from some of her Friends, for the Occasion; and had a Man-Cook for dressing the Viſtuals.

She was only at a loss for Plate, which she gave me a Whisper of, and I made *Amy* fetch a large strong Box which I had lodg'd in a safe Hand, in which was all the fine Plate, which I had provid'd on a worse Occasion, as is mention'd before; and I put it into the QUAKER's Hand, obliging her not to use it as mine, but as her own, for a Reason I shall mention presently.

I was now my LADY——, and I muſt own, I was exceedingly pleas'd with it; 'twas so Big, and so Great, to hear myself call'd *Her Ladyship*, and *Your Ladyship*, and *the like*, that I was like the *Indian King* at *Virginia*, who, having a House built for him by the *English*, and a Lock put upon the Door, wou'd sit whole Days together, with the Key in his Hand, locking and unlocking, and double-locking the Door, with an unaccountable Pleasure at the Novelty; so I cou'd have sat a whole Day together to hear *Amy* talk to me, and call me *Your Ladyship* at every word; but after a while the Novelty wore off, and the pride of it abated; till at laſt, truly I wanted the other Title as much as I did that of *Ladyship* before.

We liv'd this Week in all the Innocent Mirth imaginable; and our good-humoured QUAKER was so pleasant in her Way, that it was particularly entertaining to us: We had no Musick at all, or Dancing; only I now and

then sung a *French* Song, to divert my Spouse, who desir'd it, and the Privacy of our Mirth, greatly added to the Pleasure of it: I did not make many Cloaths for my Wedding, having always a great-many rich Cloaths by me, which, with a little altering for the Fashion, were perfectly new: The next Day he press'd me to dress tho' we had no Company; at last, jesting with him, I told him, I believ'd I was able to dress me so, in one kind of Dress that I had by me, that he wou'd not know his Wife when he saw her, especially if any-body else was by: *No!* he said, *that was impossible*; and he long'd to see that Dress; *I told him*, I wou'd dress me in it, if he wou'd promise me never to desire me to appear in it before Company; he promis'd he wou'd not, but wanted to know *why* too; as Husbands, you know, are inquisitive Creatures, and love to enquire after any-thing they think is kept from them; but I had an Answer ready for him; because, *said I*, it is not a decent Dress in this Country, and wou'd not look modest; neither indeed, wou'd it, for it was but one Degree off, from appearing in one's Shift; but it was the usual Wear in the Country where they were used: He was satisfy'd with my Answer, and gave me his Promise, never to ask me to be seen in it before Company: I then withdrew, taking only *Amy* and the Q U A K E R with me; and *Amy* dress'd me in my old *Turkish Habit* which I danc'd in formerly, &c., as before: The Q U A K E R was charm'd with the Dress, *and merrily said*, That if such a Dress shou'd come to be worn here, she shou'd not know what to do; she shou'd be tempted not to dress in the Q U A K E R S ' Way any-more.

When all the Dress was put on, I loaded it with Jewels, and in particular, I plac'd the large Breast-Jewel which he had given me, of a thousand Pistoles, upon the Front

of the *Tybiaai*, or Head-Dress; where it made a most glorious Show indeed; I had my own Diamond-Necklace on, and my Hair was *Tout Brilliant*, all glittering with Jewels.

His Picture set with Diamonds, I had plac'd stitch'd to my Vest, just, *as might be suppos'd*, upon my Heart (which is the Compliment in such Cases among the *Eastern* People), and all being open at the Breast, there was no room for any-thing of a Jewel there: In this Figure, *Amy* holding the Train of my Robe, I came down to him: He was surpriz'd and perfectly astonish'd; he knew me, *to besure*, because I had prepar'd him and because there was no-body else there, but the *QUAKER* and *Amy*; but he by no means knew *Amy*; for she had dress'd herself in the Habit of a *Turkish* Slave, being the Garb of my *little Turk*, which I had at *Naples*, *as I said*; she had her Neck and Arms bare; was bare-headed, and her Hair breeded in a long Tassel hanging down her Back; but the Jade cou'd neither hold her Countenance, nor her chattering Tongue, so as to be conceal'd long.

Well, he was so charm'd with this Dress, that he wou'd have me sit and dine in it, but it was so thin, and so open before, and the Weather being also sharp, that I was afraid of taking Cold; however, the Fire being enlarg'd, and the Doors kept shut, I sat to oblige him; and he profess'd he never saw so fine a Dress in his life: I afterwards told him, that my Husband (*so he call'd the Jeweller that was kill'd*) bought it for me, at *Leghorn*, with a young *Turkish* Slave, which I parted with at *Paris*; and that it was by the help of that Slave that I learn'd how to dress in it, and how every-thing was to be worn, and many of the *Turkish* Customs also, with some of their Language; this Story agreeing with the Fact, only changing the Person,

was very natural, and so it went off with him; but there was good Reason why I shou'd not receive any Company in this Dress, *that is to say*, not in *England*; *I need not repeat it; you will bear more of it.*

But when I came Abroad, I frequently put it on, and upon two or three Occasions danc'd in it, but always at his Request.

We continued at the QUAKER'S Lodgings for above a Year; for now making as tho' it was difficult to determine where to settle in *England* to his Satisfaction, unless in *London*, which was not to mine; I pretended to make him an Offer, that to oblige him, I began to incline to go and live Abroad with him; that I knew nothing could be more agreeable to him, and that as to me, every Place was alike; that as I had liv'd Abroad without a Husband so many Years, it cou'd be no Burthen to me to live Abroad again, *especially with him*; then we fell to straining our Courtesies upon one-another; he told me, he was perfectly easie at living in *England*, and had squar'd all his Affairs accordingly; for that, as he had told me he intended to give over all Business in the World, as well the Care of managing it, as the Concern about it, seeing we were both in Condition neither to want it, nor to have it be worth our while; so I might see it was his Intention, by his getting himself Naturaliz'd, and getting the Patent of Baronet, &c. Well, for-all that, I told him, I accepted his Compliment, but I cou'd not but know that his Native Country, where his Children were breeding up, must be most agreeable to him, and that if I was of such value to him, I wou'd be there then, to enhance the rate of his satisfaction; that wherever he was, wou'd be a Home to me; and any Place in the World wou'd be *England* to me, if he was with me; And thus, *in short*, I brought him to give

me leave to oblige him with going to live Abroad; when in truth, I cou'd not have been perfectly easie at living in *England* unless I had kept constantly within-doors; lest some time or other, the dissolute Life I had liv'd here shou'd have come to be known; and all those wicked things have been known too, which I now began to be very much asham'd of.

When we clos'd up our Wedding-Week, in which our QUAKER had been so very handsome to us, I told him how much I thought we were oblig'd to her for her generous Carriage to us, how she had acted the kindest Part thro' the whole, and how faithful a Friend she had been to me upon all Occasions; and then letting him know a little of her Family Unhappinesses, I propos'd that I thought I not only ought to be grateful to her, but really to do something extraordinary for her, towards making her easie in her Affairs; *and I added*, that I had no hangers-on, that shou'd trouble him; that there was no-body belong'd to me but what was thorowly provided for; and that if I did something for this honest Woman, that was considerable, it shou'd be the last Gift I wou'd give to any-body in the World, *but Amy*; and as for her, we was not a-going to turn her adrift, but whenever anything offer'd for her we wou'd do as we saw Cause; that *in the meantime*, Amy was not poor, that she had sav'd together between seven and eight Hundred Pounds; *by the way*, I did not tell him *how*, and *by what wicked Ways she had got it*; but that she *had it*; and that was enough to let him know she wou'd never be in want of us.

My Spouse was exceedingly pleas'd with my Discourse about the QUAKER, made a kind of a Speech to me upon the Subject of Gratitude; *told me*, it was one of the brightest Parts of a Gentlewoman; that it was so twisted with

Honesty, nay, and even with Religion too, that he question'd whether either of them cou'd be found, where Gratitude was not to be found; that in this Act there was not only Gratitude, but Charity, and that to make the Charity still more Christian-like, the Object too had real merit to attract it; he therefore agreed to the thing with all his Heart, only wou'd have had me let him pay it out of his Effects.

I told him, *as for that*, I did not design, *whatever I had said formerly*, that we should have *two Pockets*; and that tho' I had talk'd to him of being a Free Woman, and an Independent, *and the like*, and he had offer'd and promis'd that I shou'd keep all my own Estate in my own Hands; yet, that since I had taken him, I wou'd e'en do as other *honest Wives* did, where I thought fit to give myself, I shou'd give what I had too; that if I reserv'd anything, it shou'd be only in case of Mortality, and that I might give it to his Children afterwards, *as my own gift*; and that, *in short*, if he thought fit to join Stocks, we wou'd see to-Morrow Morning, what Strength we cou'd both make up in the World, and, bringing it all together, consider before we resolv'd upon the Place of removing, how we should dispose of what we had, as well as of ourselves: This Discourse was too obliging, and he too much a man of Sence not to receive it, as it was meant; *he only answer'd*, We wou'd do in that, as we shou'd both agree; but the thing under our present Care, was to show not *Gratitude* only, but Charity and Affection too, to our kind Friend the QUAKER; and the first Word he spoke of, was to settle a thousand Pounds upon her, *for her Life, that is to say*, sixty Pounds a Year; but in such a manner, as not to be in the Power of any Person to reach, but herself: This was a great thing, and indeed, shew'd the generous Prin-

ciples of my Husband, and for that reason I mention it; but I thought that a little too much, too, and particularly, because I had another thing in View for her, about the Plate; so I told him I thought if he gave her a Purse with a Hundred Guineas as a Present *first*, and then made her a Compliment of 40*l. per Annum* for her Life, secur'd any such Way as she shou'd desire, it wou'd be very handsome.

He agreed to that; and the same Day, in the Evening, when we were just going to-Bed, he took my Q U A K E R by the Hand, and with a Kiss, told her That we had been very kindly treated by her from the beginning of this Affair, and his Wife before, as she (*meaning me*) had inform'd him; and that he thought himself bound to let her see, that she had oblig'd Friends who knew how to be grateful; that for his Part of the Obligation, he desir'd she would accept of *that*, for an Acknowledgment in Part only (*putting the gold into her Hand*), and that his Wife wou'd talk with her about what further he had to say to her; And upon that, not giving her time hardly to say *thank ye*, away he went upstairs into our BedChamber, leaving her confus'd and not knowing what to say.

When he was gone, she began to make very handsome and obliging Representations of her Good-will to us both, but that it was without Expectation of Reward; that I had given her several valuable Presents before, *and so indeed I had*; for, besides the Piece of Linnen which I had given her *at first*, I had given her a Suit of Damask Table-Linnen, of the Linnen I bought for my Balls, *viz.* Three Table-cloths and three Dozen of Napkins; and at another time, I gave her a little Necklace of Gold Beads, *and the like*, but that *is by the way*; but she mention'd them, *I say*; and how she was oblig'd by me, on many other Occasions;

that she was not in Condition to show her Gratitude any other way, not being able to make a suitable Return; and that now we took from her all Opportunity to Ballance my former Friendship, and left her more in Debt than she was before: She spoke this in a very good kind of a Manner, *in her own way*, but which was very agreeable indeed, and had as much apparent Sincerity, and I verily believe as real, as was possible to be express'd; but I put a Stop to it, and bid her say no more, but accept of what my Spouse had given her, which was but in Part, as she had heard him say; *and put it up*, says I, *and come and sit down here, and give me Leave to say something else to you, on the same Head which my Spouse and I have settled between ourselves, in your Behalf*; What dost thee mean? *says she*, and blush'd and look'd surpriz'd, but did not stir; she was going to speak again, but I interrupted her, and told her she shou'd make no more Apologies of any kind whatever, for I had better things than all this, to talk to her of; so I went on, and told her, That as she had been so friendly and kind to us on every Occasion, and that her House was the lucky Place where we came together; and that she knew I was from her own Mouth, acquainted in Part, with her Circumstances, we were resolv'd she shou'd be the better for us, as long as she liv'd. Then I told her what we had resolv'd to do for her; and that she had nothing more to do, but to consult with me, how it shou'd be effectually secur'd for her, distinct from any of the Effects which were her Husband's; and that if her Husband did so supply her, that she cou'd live comfortably, and not want it for Bread or other Necessaries, she shou'd not make use of it, but lay up the Income of it, and add it every Year to the Principal, so to increase the Annual Payment, which in time, and perhaps before she might

come to want it, might double itself; that we were very willing whatever she shou'd so lay up, shou'd be to herself, and whoever she thought fit after her; but that the forty Pound a-year, must return to our Family after her Life; which we both wish'd might be long and happy.

Let no Reader wonder at my extraordinary Concern for this poor Woman; or at my giving my Bounty to her a Place in this account; *it is not, I assure you*, to make a Pageantry of my Charity, or to value myself upon the Greatness of my Soul, that I shou'd give in so profuse a Manner as this, which was above my Figure, if my Wealth had been twice as much as it was; but there was another Spring from whence all flow'd, and 'tis on that Account I speak of it: Was it possible I cou'd think of a poor desolate Woman with four Children, and her Husband gone from her, *and perhaps good for little if he had stay'd—I say*, was I, that had tasted so deep of the Sorrows of such a kind of Widowhood, able to look on her, and think of her Circumstances, and not be touch'd in an uncommon Manner? No, No, I never look'd on her, and her Family, tho' she was not left so helpless and friendless as I had been, without remembering my own Condition; when *Amy* was sent out to pawn or sell my *Pair of Stays*, to buy a Breast of Mutton, and a Bunch of Turnips; nor cou'd I look on her poor Children, tho' not poor and perishing, like mine, without Tears; reflecting on the dreadful Condition that mine were reduc'd to when poor *Amy* sent them all into their Aunt's in *Spittle-Fields* and ran away from them: These were the Original Springs or Fountain-Head, from whence my Affectionate Thoughts were mov'd to assist this poor Woman.

When a poor Debtor, having lain long in the Compter, or *Ludgate*, or the *King's Bench*, for Debt, afterwards gets

out, rises again in the World, and grows rich; such a one is a certain Benefactor to the Prisoners there, and perhaps to every Prison he passes by, as long as he lives; for he remembers the dark Days of his own Sorrow; and even those who never had the Experience of such Sorrows to stir up their Minds to Acts of Charity, would have the same charitable good Disposition, did they as sensibly remember what it is, that distinguishes them from others by a more favourable and merciful Providence.

This, *I say* was, however, the Spring of my Concern for this honest, friendly, and grateful QUAKER, and as I had so plentiful a Fortune in the World, I resolv'd she should taste the Fruit of her kind Usage to me, in a manner that she cou'd not expect.

All the while I talk'd to her, I saw the Disorder of her Mind; the sudden Joy was too much for her, and she colour'd, trembled, chang'd, and at last grew pale, and was indeed near fainting; when she hastily rang a little Bell for her Maid, who coming in immediately, she beckon'd to her, for speak she cou'd not, to fill her a Glass of Wine, but she had no Breath to take it in, and was almost choak'd with that which she took in her Mouth; I saw she was ill, and assisted her what I cou'd, and with Spirits and things to smell too, just kept her from Fainting, when she beckon'd to her Maid to withdraw, and immediately burst out in crying, and that reliev'd her; when she recover'd herself a little, she flew to me, and throwing her Arms about my Neck, *O! says she, thou hast almost kill'd me*; and there she hung, laying her Head in my Neck for half a quarter of an Hour, not able to speak, but sobbing like a Child that had been whipp'd.

I was very sorry, that I did not stop a little, in the mid-

dle of my Discourse and make her drink a Glass of Wine, before it had put her Spirits into such a violent Motion; but it was too late, and it was ten to one odds, but that it had kill'd her.

But she came to herself at last, and began to say some very good things in return for my Kindness; I would not let her go on, *but told her*, I had more to say to her still, than all this, but that I would let it alone till another time; my meaning was, about the Box of Plate, good part of which I gave her, and some I gave to *Amy*, for I had so much Plate, and some so large, that I thought if I let my Husband see it, he might be apt to wonder what Occasion I cou'd ever have for so much, and for Plate of such a kind too; as particularly, a great Cistern for Bottles, which cost a hundred and twenty Pound, and some large Candlesticks, too big for any ordinary Use: These I caus'd *Amy* to sell; *in short*, *Amy* sold above three hundred Pounds' worth of Plate; what I gave the QUAKER was worth above sixty Pounds, and I gave *Amy* above thirty Pounds'-worth, and yet I had a great deal left for my Husband.

Nor did our Kindness to the QUAKER end with the forty Pound a Year, for we were always, while we stay'd with her, which was above ten Months, giving her one good thing or another; and, *in a word*, instead of Lodging with her, she Boarded with us, for I kept the House, and she and all her Family eat and drank with us, and yet we paid her the Rent of the House too; *in short*, I remember'd my *Widowhood*, and I made this Widow's Heart glad many a Day the more, upon that Account.

And now my Spouse and I began to think of going over to *Holland*, where I had propos'd to him to live, and in order to settle all the Preliminaries of our future Man-

ner of Living, I began to draw in my Effects, so as to have them all at Command, upon whatever Occasion we thought fit; after which, *one Morning* I call'd my Spouse up to me; hark ye, Sir, *said I to him*, I have two very weighty Questions to ask of you; I don't know what Answer you will give to the *first*, but I doubt you will be able to give but a sorry Answer to the *other*, and yet, *I assure you*, it is of the last Importance to yourself, and towards the future Part of your Life, wherever it is to be.

He did not seem to be much alarm'd, because he could see I was speaking in a kind of merry way. *Let's hear your Questions*, my Dear, *says he*, and *I'll give the best Answer I can to them*: Why, first, *says I*,

1. You have marry'd a Wife here, made her a *lady*, and put her in Expectation of being something else still, when she comes Abroad; pray have you examin'd whether you are able to supply all her extravagant Demands when she comes Abroad; and maintain an expensive *Englishwoman* in all her Pride, and Vanity? *In short*, have you enquir'd whether you are able to keep her?

2. You have marry'd a wife here, and given her a great many fine things, and you maintain her like a *Princess*, and sometimes call her *so*; pray what Portion have you had with her? what Fortune has she been to you? and where does her Estate lie, that you keep her so fine? I am afraid you keep her in a Figure a great-deal above her Estate, *at least* above all that you have seen of it yet? are you sure you haven't got a *Bite*, and that you have not made a Beggar a *Lady*?

Well, *says he*, have you any more Questions to ask? Let's have them all together, perhaps they may be all answer'd in a few Words, as well as these two: No, *says I*, these are the two grand Questions, at least for the present:

Why then, *says he*, I'll answer you in a few Words, That I am fully Master of my own Circumstances, and without further Enquiry, can let my Wife you speak of, know, that as I have made her a *Lady*, I can maintain her *as a Lady* wherever she goes with me; and this, whether I have one Pistole of her Portion or, whether she has any portion or no: And as I have not enquir'd whether she has any portion or not, so she shall not have the less Respect shew'd her from me, or be oblig'd to live meaner or by any-ways straiten'd on that Account; on the contrary, if she goes Abroad to live with me in my own Country, I will make her more than a *Lady*, and support the Expence of it too, without meddling with anything she has; and this I suppose, *says he*, contains an Answer to both your Questions together.

He spoke this with a great deal more Earnestness in his Countenance than I had when I propos'd my Questions, and said a great-many kind things upon it, as the Consequences of former Discourses, so that I was oblig'd to be in earnest too; My Dear, *says I*, I was but in jest in my Questions; but they were propos'd to introduce what I am going to say to you in earnest; *namely*, that if I am to go Abroad, 'tis time I shou'd let you know how things stand, and what I have to bring you, with your Wife; how it is to be dispos'd, and secur'd, *and the like*; and therefore, come, *says I*, sit down, and let me show you your Bargain here; I hope you will find, that you have not got a Wife without a Fortune.

He told me then, that since he found I was in earnest, he desir'd that I would adjourn it till to-Morrow, and then we wou'd do as the poor People do after they Marry, feel in their Pockets, and see how much Money they can bring together in the World; Well, *says I*,

with all my Heart; and so we ended our Talk for that time.

As this was in the Morning, my Spouse went out after Dinner to his Goldsmith's, *as he said*, and about three Hours after, returns with a Porter and two large Boxes with him; and his Servant brought another Box, which I observ'd was almost as heavy as the two that the Porter brought, and made the poor Fellow sweat heartily; he dismiss'd the Porter, and in a little-while after went out again with his Man, and returning at Night, brought another Porter with more Boxes and Bundles, and all was carried up and put into a Chamber next to our Bed-Chamber, and in the Morning he call'd for a pretty large round Table and began to unpack.

When the Boxes were open'd I found they were chiefly full of Books, and Papers, and Parchments, *I mean*, Books of Accounts, and Writings, *and such things*, as were in themselves of no Moment to me, because I understood them not; but I perceiv'd he took them all out, and spread them about him, upon the Table, and Chairs, and began to be very busie with them; so I withdrew, and left him; and he was indeed so busie among them, that he never miss'd me till I had been gone a good-while; but when he had gone thro' all his Papers, and come to open a little Box, he call'd for me again; Now, *says he*, and called me his *Countess*, I am ready to answer your *first Question*; if you will sit down till I have open'd this *Box*, we will see how it stands.

So we open'd the box. There was in it indeed, what I did not expect, for I thought he had sunk his Estate, rather than rais'd it; but he produc'd me in Goldsmith's Bills, and Stock in the *English East-India Company*, about sixteen thousand Pounds Sterling; then he gave into my

Hands nine Assignments upon the Bank of *Lyons* in *France*, and two upon the Rents of the Town-House in *Paris*, amounting in the whole to 5800 Crowns *per Annum*, or annual Rent as 'tis called there; and *Lastly*, the Sum of 30,000 *Rixdollars* in the Bank of *Amsterdam*; besides some Jewels and Gold in the Box to the Value of about 15 or 1600 l., among which was a very good Neck-lace of Pearlof about 200 l. Value; and that he pull'd out, and ty'd about my Neck; telling me, That shou'd not be reckon'd into the Account.

I was equally pleas'd and surpriz'd, and it was with an inexpressible Joy that I saw him so rich: You might well tell me, *said I*, that you were able to make me *Countess*, and maintain me as such: *In short*, he was immensely rich; for besides all this he shew'd me, which was the Reason of his being so busie among the Books, *I say*, he shew'd me several Adventures he had Abroad, in the Business of his Merchandize; as particularly, an eighth Share in an *East India* Ship then Abroad, an Account-Courant with a Merchant, at *Cadiz*, in *Spain*; about 3000 l. lent upon *Bottomree*, upon Ships gone to the *Indies*; and a large Cargo of Goods in a Merchant's Hands, for sale at *Lisbon* in *Portugal*; so that in his Books there was about 12,000 l. more; all which put together, made about 27,000 l. Sterling, and 1320 l. a Year.

I stood amaz'd at this Account, *as well I might*, and said nothing to him for a good-while, and the rather, because I saw him still busie looking over his Books. After a-while, as I was going to express my Wonder; *Hold*, my Dear, *says he*, this is not all neither; Then he pull'd me out some old Seals, and small Parchment-Rolls, which I did not understand; *but he told me*, they were a Right of Reversion which he had to a Paternal Estate in his Fami-

ly, and a Mortgage of 14000 *Rixdollars*, which he had upon it, in the Hands of the present Possessor, so that was about 3000 l. more.

But now hold again, *says he*, for I must pay my Debts out of all this, and they are very great, *I assure you*: And the *first*, *he said*, was a black Article of 8000 Pistoles, which he had a Law-Suit about at *Paris*, but had it awarded against him, which was the Loss he had told me of, and which made him leave *Paris* in Disgust; that in other Accounts he ow'd about 5300 l. Sterling; but after all this, upon the whole, he had still 17000 l. clear Stock in Money, and 1320 l. a-Year in Rent.

After some Pause it came to my Turn to Speak; Well, *says I*, 'tis very hard a Gentleman with such a Fortune as this, shou'd come over to *England* and marry a Wife with *Nothing*; it shall never, *says I*, be said, but what I have I'll bring into the Publick Stock; so I began to produce.

First, I pull'd out the Mortgage which good *Sir Robert* had procur'd for me, the annual Rent 700 l. *per Annum*, the principal Money 14,000 l.

Secondly, I pull'd out another Mortgage upon Land, procur'd by the same faithful Friend, which at three times, had advanc'd 12000 l.

Thirdly, I pull'd him out a Parcel of little Securities, procur'd by several Hands, by Fee-Farm Rents and such Petty Mortgages as those Times afforded, amounting to 10800 l. principal Money, and paying six hundred and thirty six Pounds a-Year; so that in the whole, there was two thousand and fifty-six Pounds a-Year, Ready-Money constantly coming in.

When I had shown him all these, I laid them upon the Table, and bade him take them, that he might be able to give me an Answer to the second Question, viz.

What Fortune he had with his Wife? and laugh'd a little at it.

He look'd at them a-while, and then handed them all back again to me; I will not touch them, *says he*, nor one of them, till they are all settl'd in Trustee's Hands, for your own Use, and the Management wholly your own.

I cannot omit what happen'd to me while all this was acting, tho' it was chearful Work in the main, yet I trembled every Joint of me, worse, for aught I know, than ever Belshazzar did at the Hand-writing on the Wall, and the Occasion was every way as just: *Unhappy Wretch*, said I to myself: *shall my ill-got Wealth, the Product of Prosperous Lust, and of a vile and vicious Life of Whoredom and Adultery, be intermingled with the honest well-gotten Estate of this innocent Gentleman, to be a Moth and a Caterpillar among it, and bring the Judgments of Heaven upon him, and upon what he has, for my sake! Shall my Wickedness blast his Comforts? Shall I be Fire in his Flax! and be a Means to provoke Heaven to curse his Blessings?* God forbid! *I'll keep them asunder*, if it be possible.

This is the true Reason why I have been so particular in the Account of my vast acquir'd Stock; and how his Estate, which was perhaps, the Product of many Years' fortunate industry; and which was equal, if not superior, to mine, at best, was *at my Request*, kept apart from mine, *as is mention'd above*.

I have told you how he gave back all my Writings into my own Hands again: *Well, says I*, seeing you will have it be kept apart, *it shall be so*, upon one Condition, which I have to propose, and no other: And what is the Condition? *says he?* why, says I, all the Pretence I can have for the making-over my own Estate to me, is that in Case of your Mortallity I may have it reserv'd for me, if I out-

live you; well, *says he*, that is true: But then, *said I*, the Annual Income is always receiv'd by the Husband, during his Life, as 'tis suppos'd for the mutual Subsistence of the Family; now, *says I*, here is 2000*l.* a Year, which I believe is as much as we shall spend, and I desire none of it may be sav'd; and all the Income of your own Estate, the interest of the 17,000*l.* and the 1320*l.* a Year may be constantly laid by for the Encrease of your Estate; and so *added I*, by joining the Interest every Year to the Capital, you will perhaps grow as rich as you would do, if you were to Trade with it all, if you were oblig'd to keep House out of it too.

He lik'd the Proposal very well, *and said* it should be so; and this way, I in some Measure, satisfied myself, that I should not bring my Husband under the Blast of a just Providence, for mingling my cursedill-gotten wealth with his honest Estate: This was occasion'd by the Reflections which at some Intervals of time, came into my Thoughts, of the Justice of Heaven, which I had reason to expect would some time or other still fall upon me or my Effects, for the dreadful life I had liv'd.

And let no-body conclude from the strange Success I met with in all my wicked Doings, and the vast Estate which I had rais'd by it, that therefore I either was happy or easie: No, no, there was a Dart struck into the Liver; there was a secret Hell within, even all the while, when our Joy was at the highest, but more especially *now*, after it was all over, and when according to all appearance, I was one of the happiest Women upon Earth; all this while, *I say*, I had such a constant Terror upon my Mind as gave me every now and then very terrible Shocks, and which made me expect something very frightful upon every Accident of Life.

In a word, it never Lighten'd or Thunder'd but I expected the next Flash wou'd penetrate my Vitals, and melt the Sword (*Soul*) in this Scabbard of Flesh; it never blew a Storm of Wind, but I expected the Fall of some Stack of Chimneys, or some Part of the House wou'd bury me in its Ruins; and so of other things.

But I shall perhaps, have Occasion to speak of all these things again by-and-by; the Case before us was in a manner settl'd; we had full four thousand Pounds *per Annum* for our future *Subsistence*, besides a vast Sum in Jewels and Plate; and besides this, I had about eight thousand Pounds reserv'd in Money, which I kept back from him, to provide for my two Daughters, of whom I have yet so much to say.

With this Estate, settl'd as you have heard, and with the best Husband in the World, I left *England* again: I had not only in humane Prudence, and by the Nature of the thing, *being now marry'd and settl'd in so glorious a Manner*, I say, I had not only abandon'd all the gay and wicked Course which I had gone thorow before; but I began to look back upon it with that Horror, and that Detestation, which is the certain Companion, if not the Fore-runner, of Repentance.

Sometimes the Wonders of my present Circumstances wou'd work upon me, and I shou'd have some Raptures upon my Soul, upon the Subject of my comings so smoothly out of the Arms of Hell, that I was not ingulfed in Ruin, as most who lead such Lives are, first or last; but this was a Flight too high for me; I was not come to that Repentance that is rais'd from a Sence of Heaven's Goodness; I repented of the Crime, but it was of another and lower kind of Repentance, and rather mov'd by my Fears of Vengeance, than from a Sence of being

spar'd from being punish'd and landed safe after a Storm.

The first thing which happen'd after our coming to the *Hague* (where we lodg'd for a while) was that my Spouse saluted me one Morning with the Title of *Countess*; as he said he intended to do, by having, the Inheritance to which the Honour was annex'd made over to him; it is true, it was a Reversion, but it soon fell, and in the mean time as all the Brothers of a *Count* are call'd *Counts*, so I had the Title by Courtesie about three Years before I had it in reality.

I was agreeably surpriz'd at this coming so soon, and wou'd have had my Spouse have taken the Money which it cost him, out of my Stock, but he laugh'd at me and went on.

I was now in the height of my Glory and Prosperity, and I was call'd the *Countess de —*, for I had obtain'd that unlook'd for, which I secretly aim'd at, and was really the main Reason of my coming Abroad: I took now more Servants; liv'd in a kind of Magnificence that I had not been acquainted with, was call'd *Your Honour* at every word, and had a Coronet behind my Coach; tho' at the same time I knew little or nothing of my new Pedigree.

The first thing that my Spouse took upon him to manage, was to declare ourselves marry'd eleven Years before our arriving in *Holland*, and consequently to acknowledge our little Son, who was yet in *England*, to be legitimate; order him to be brought over, and added to his Family, and acknowledge him to be our own.

This was done by giving Notice to his People at *Nimeguen*, where his Children (which were two Sons and a Daughter) were brought-up, that he was come over from.

England; and that he was arriv'd at *The Hague*, with his Wife and shou'd reside there some time; and that he wou'd have his two Sons brought down to see him, which accordingly was done, and where I entertain'd them with all the Kindness and Tenderness that they cou'd expect from their Mother-in-Law; and who pretended to be so ever since they were two or three Years old.

This, supposing us to have been so long marry'd was not difficult at-all in a Country where we had been seen together about that time, *viz.* eleven Years and a half before; and where we had never been seen afterwards, till we now return'd together; this being seen, together, was also openly own'd, and acknowledg'd of course, by our Friend the Merchant at *Rotterdam*; and also by the People in the House where we both lodg'd, in the same City, and where our first Intimacies began, and who, as it happen'd, were all alive; and therefore to make it the more publick we made a Tour to *Rotterdam* again, lodg'd in the same House, and was visited there by our Friend, the Merchant; and afterwards invited frequently to his House, where he treated us very handsomely.

This Conduct of my Spouse, and which he manag'd very cleverly, was indeed, a Testimony of a wonderful Degree of Honesty and Affection to our little Son; for it was done purely for the sake of the Child.

I call it an honest Affection, because it was from a Principle of Honesty that he so earnestly concern'd himself, to prevent the Scandal which wou'd otherwise have fallen upon the Child, *who was itself innocent*; and as it was from this Principle of Justice that he so earnestly solicited me, and conjur'd me by the natural Affections of a Mother, to marry him, when it was yet young within me, and unborn, that the Child might not suffer for the Sin of

its Father and Mother; so tho' at the same time, he really lov'd me very well, yet I had reason to believe, that it was from this Principle of Justice to the Child that he came to *England* again to seek me, with design to marry me and, *as he call'd it*, save the innocent lamb from an infamy worse than Death.

It is with just Reproach to myself, that I must repeat it again, that I had not the same Concern for it, tho' it was the Child of my own Body; nor, had I ever the hearty affectionate Love to the Child, that he had; what the reason of it was, I cannot tell; and indeed, I had shown a general Neglect of the Child thro' all the gay Years of my *London* Revels; except that I sent *Amy* to look upon it now and then, and to pay for its Nursing; as for me, I scarce saw it four times in the first four Years of its Life, and often wish'd it would go quietly out of the World; whereas a Son which I had by the Jeweller, I took a different Care of, and shew'd a differing Concern for, tho' I did not let him know me; for I provided very well for him; had him put out very well to School; and when he came to Years fit for it, let him go over with a Person of Honesty and good Business, to the *Indies*; and, after he had liv'd there some time, and began to act for himself, sent him over the Value of 2000*l.* at several times, with which he traded, and grew rich; and, *as 'tis to be hoped*, may at last come over again with forty or fifty thousand Pounds in his Pocket, as many do who have not such Encouragement at their Beginning.

I also sent him over a Wife, a beautiful young Lady, well bred, an exceeding good-natur'd, pleasant Creature; but the nice young Fellow did not like her, and had the Impudence to write to me, *that is, to the Person I employ'd to correspond with him*, to send him another, and promis'd

that he wou'd marry her I had sent him, to a Friend of his, who lik'd her better than he did; but I took it so ill, that I wou'd not send him another, and withal, stopp'd another Article of 1000l. which I had appointed to send him: He consider'd of it afterwards, and offer'd to take her; but then truly she took so ill the first Affront he put upon her, that she wou'd not have him, and I sent him word, I thought she was very much in the right: However, after courting her two Years, and some Friends interposing, she took him, and made him an excellent Wife, as I knew she wou'd; but I never sent him the thousand Pounds Cargo, so that he lost that Money for misusing me, and took the Lady at Last without it.

My new Spouse and I, liv'd a very regular, contemplative Life, and in itself certainly a Life fill'd with all human Felicity: But if I look'd upon my present Situation with Satisfaction, as I certainly did, so in Proportion I on all Occasions look'd back on former things with Detestation, and with the utmost Affliction; and now indeed, and not till now, those Reflections began to prey upon my Comforts, and lessen the Sweets of my other Enjoyments: They might be said to have gnaw'd a Hole in my Heart before; but now they made a Hole quite thro' it; now they ate into all my pleasant things; made bitter every Sweet, and mix'd my sighs with every Smile.

Not all the Affluence of a plentiful Fortune; not a hundred Thousand Pounds Estate (for between us we had little less), not Honour and Titles, Attendants and Equipages; *in a word*, not all the things we call Pleasure, cou'd give me any relish, or sweeten the Taste of things to me; *at least*, not so much, but I grew sad, heavy, pensive, and melancholly; slept little, and ate little; dream'd continually of the most frightful and terrible things imaginable:

Nothing but Apparitions of Devils and Monsters; falling into Gulfs, and off from steep and high Precipices, *and the like*; so that in the Morning, when I shou'd rise and be refresh'd with the Blessing of Rest, I was *Hag-ridden* with Frights, and terrible things, form'd merely in the Imagination; and was either tir'd and wanted Sleep, or over-run with Vapours, and not fit for conversing with my Family, or any-one else.

My Husband, the tenderest Creature in the World, and particularly so to me, was in great Concern for me, and did every-thing that lay in his Power, to comfort and restore me; strove to reason me out of it; then tried all the Ways possible to divert me; but it was all to no purpose, or to but very little.

My only Relief was, sometimes to unbosom myself to poor *Amy*, when she and I were alone; and she did all she cou'd to comfort me, but all was to little Effect there; for tho' *Amy* was the better Penitent before, when we had been in the Storm; *Amy* was just where she us'd to be, *now*, a wild, gay, loose Wretch, and not much the graver for her Age; for *Amy* was between forty and fifty by this time too.

But to go on with my own Story; As I had no Comforter, so I had no Counsellor; it was well, *as I often thought*, that I was not a *Roman-Catholic*; for what a piece of work shou'd I have made, to have gone to a Priest with such a History as I had to tell him? and what Pen-nance wou'd any *Father-Confessor* have oblig'd me to perform? especially if he had been honest and true to his office.

However, as I had none of the recourse, so I had none of the Absolution by which the Criminal confessing, goes away comforted; but I went about with a Heart loaded

with Crime, and altogether in the dark, as to what I was to do; and in this Condition I languish'd near two Years; I may well call it languishing, for if Providence had not reliev'd me, I should have died in little time: *But of that hereafter.*

I must now go back to another Scene and join it to this End of my Story, which will complete all my Concern with *England*, at least, all that I shall bring into this Account. I have hinted at large, what I had done for my two sons, one at *Messina*, and the other in the *Indies*.

But I have not gone through the Story of my two Daughters: I was so in danger of being known by one of them, that I durst not see her, so as to let her know who I was; and for the other, I cou'd not well know how to see her, and own her, and let her see me, because she must then know that I wou'd not let her Sister know me, which wou'd look strange; so that, upon the whole, I resolv'd to see neither of them at-all, but *Amy* manag'd all that for me; and when she had made Gentlewomen of them both, by giving them a good tho' late Education, she had like to have blown up the whole Case, and herself and me too, by an unhappy Discovery of herself to the last of them, *that is*, to her who was our Cookmaid, and who, *as I said before*, *Amy* had been oblig'd to turn away, for fear of the very Discovery which now happen'd. I have observ'd already in what Manner *Amy* manag'd her by a third Person; and how the Girl, when she was set up for a Lady, *as above*, came and visited *Amy* at my Lodgings; after which, *Amy* going, as was her Custom, to see the Girl's Brother (my Son), at the honest Man's House in Spittle-Fields; both the Girls were there, meerly by accident, at the same time, and the other girl unawares discover'd the

Secret, *namely*, that this was the Lady that had done all this for them.

Amy was greatly surpriz'd at it, but as she saw there was no Remedy, she made a Jest of it, and so after that convers'd openly, being still satisfied that neither of them cou'd make much of it, as long as they knew nothing of me: So she took them together one time, and told them the History, *as she call'd it, of their Mother*, beginning at the miserable carrying them to their Aunt's; she own'd she was not their Mother, herself, but describ'd her to them: However, when she said *she was not their Mother*, one of them express'd herself very much surpriz'd, for the Girl had taken up a strong Fancy that *Amy* was really her Mother; and that she had for some particular Reasons conceal'd it from her; and therefore when she told her frankly that she was not her Mother, the Girl fell a-crying, and *Amy* had much ado to keep Life in her: This was the Girl who was at first my Cook-maid in the *Pallmall*; when *Amy* had brought her to again a little, and she had recover'd her first disorder, *Amy* asked what ail'd her; the poor Girl hung about her, and kiss'd her, and was in such a Passion still, tho' she was a great Wench of Nineteen or Twenty years old, that she cou'd not be brought to Speak a great-while; at last, having recover'd her speech, she said still, *But oh do not say you ain't my Mother. I'm sure you are my Mother*; and then the girl cry'd again like to kill herself: *Amy* could not tell what to do with her a good-while; she was loth to say again, *she was not her Mother*, because she wou'd not throw her into a Fit of crying again; but she went round about a little with her: Why Child, *says she*, why wou'd you have me be your Mother? If it be because I am so kind to you, be easie, my Dear, *says Amy*, I'll be as kind to you still as if I was your mother.

Ay but, *says the Girl*, I am sure you are my Mother too; and what have I done that you won't own me, and that you will not be called my Mother? tho' I am poor, you have made me a Gentlewoman, *says she*, and I won't do any-thing to disgrace you; besides, *adds she*, I can keep a Secret too, especially for my own Mother, sure; then she calls *Amy* her Dear Mother, and hung about her Neck again, crying still vehemently.

This last Part of the Girl's Words alarm'd *Amy*, and, *as she told me*, frightened her terribly; nay, she was so confounded with it, that she was not able to govern herself or to conceal her Disorder from the girl herself, *as you shall hear*. *Amy* was at a full Stop and confus'd to the last Degree, and the Girl, a sharp Jade, turn'd it upon her: My dear Mother, *says she*, do not be uneasie about it, I know it all; but do not be uneasy, I won't let my Sister know a word of it, or my Brother either, without you give me leave; but don't disown me now you have found me, don't hide yourself from me any longer; I can't bear that, *says she*, it will break my Heart.

I think the Girl's mad, *says Amy*. Why, Child, I tell thee if I was thy Mother I wou'd not disown thee; don't you see I am as kind to you as if I was your Mother? *Amy* might as well have sung a Song to a Kettle-Drum as talk to her: Yes, *says the Girl*, you are very good to me indeed; and that was enough to make any-body believe she was her Mother too; but however that was not the Case, she had other Reasons to believe, and to know that she was her Mother; and it was a sad thing she wou'd not let her call her Mother, who was her own Child.

Amy was so Heart-full with the Disturbance of it that she did not enter further with her into the Enquiry, as she wou'd otherwise have done; I mean as to what made

the Girl so positive, but comes away, and tells me the whole story.

I was Thunder-struck with the Story at first, and much more afterwards, *as you shall hear*; but, *I say*, I was Thunder-struck at first, and amaz'd, and said to *Amy*, There must be something or other in it more than we know of; but having examin'd further into it, I found the Girl had no Notion of any-body, but of *Amy*, and glad I was that I was not concern'd in the Pretence, and that the Girl had no Notion of me in it: But even this Easiness did not continue long, for the next time *Amy* went to see her, she was the same thing, and rather more violent, with *Amy* than she was before: *Amy* endeavour'd to pacify her by all the *Ways* imaginable; first, she told her, she took it ill that she wou'd not believe her; *and told her*, if she wou'd not give over such a foolish Whimsie, she wou'd leave her to the wide World as she found her.

This put the Girl into Fits, and she cry'd ready to kill herself, and hung about *Amy* again, like a Child: Why, *says Amy*, why can you not be easie with me then, and compose yourself, and let me go on to do you good, and show you Kindness, as I wou'd do, and as I intend to do? Can you think that if I was your Mother, I would not tell you so? What Whimsie is this that possesses your Mind? *says Amy*: Well, the Girl told her in a few Words, but those few such as frighted *Amy* out of her Wits, and me too: That she knew well enough how it was; I know, *says she*, when you left —, *naming the Village*, where I liv'd when my Father went away from us all, that you went over to *France*, I know that too, and who you went with, *says the girl*; did not my Lady *Roxana* come back again with you? I know it all well enough, tho' I was but a Child, I have heard it all. And thus she ran on with such Dis-

course, as put *Amy* out of all temper again; and she raved at her like a *Bedlam*, and told her, she would never come near her any more; she might go a-begging again if she wou'd, she'd have nothing to do with her: The Girl, a passionate Wench, told her, she knew the worst of it, she cou'd go to Service again, and if she wou'd not own her own Child, she must do as she pleas'd; then she fell into a passion of crying again, as if she wou'd kill herself.

In short, this Girl's Conduct terrify'd *Amy* to the last Degree, and me too, and was it not that we knew the Girl was quite wrong in some things, she was yet so right in some other, that it gave me a great-deal of Perplexity; but that which put *Amy* the most to it, was that the Girl (my Daughter) told her that she (*meaning me her Mother*) had gone away with the Jeweller, and into *France* too; she did not call him the *Jeweller*, but with the Landlord of the House; who, after her Mother fell into Distress, and that *Amy* had taken all the Children from her, made much of her, and afterwards marry'd her.

In short, it was plain the girl had but a broken Account of things, but yet that she had receiv'd some Accounts that had a reality in the Bottom of them; so that it seems our first Measures, and the Amour with the *Jeweller* were not so conceal'd as I thought they had been; and, it seems, came in a broken manner to my Sister-in-law, who *Amy* carry'd the children to, and she made some Bustle, it seems, about it; but as good luck was, it was too late, and I was remov'd and gone none knew whither; or else she wou'd have sent all the Children home to me again, *to be sure*.

This we pick'd out of the Girl's Discourse, *that is to say*, *Amy* did, at several times; but it all consisted of broken Fragments of Stories, such as the Girl herself had heard

so long ago, that she herself cou'd make very little of it; only that in the main, that her Mother had play'd the Whore, had gone away with the Gentleman that was Landlord of the House; that he married her; that she went into *France*; and as she had learn'd in my Family, where she was a Servant, that Mrs. *Amy* and her Lady *Roxana* had been in *France* together; so she put all these things together, and, joining them with the great Kindness that *Amy* now shew'd her, possess'd the creature that *Amy* was really her Mother; nor was it possible for *Amy* to conquer it for a long time.

But this, after I had search'd into it as far as by *Amy*'s relation I cou'd get an account of it, did not disquiet me half so much, as that the young Slut had got the Name of *Roxana* by the end; and that she knew who her Lady *Roxana* was, and the like; tho' this neither, did not hang together, for then she wou'd not have fixed upon *Amy* for her Mother: But some time after, when *Amy* had almost perswaded her out of it, and that the Girl began to be so confounded in her Discourses of it, that they made neither Head nor Tail, at last, the passionate Creature flew out in a kind of Rage, and said to *Amy*, That if she was not her Mother, Madam *Roxana* was her Mother then, for one of them, *she was sure*, was her Mother; and then, all this that *Amy* had done for her, was by Madam *Roxana*'s Order; and I am sure, says *she*, it was my Lady *Roxana*'s Coach that brought the Gentlewoman (whoever it was) to my Uncle's in Spittle-Fields, for the coachman told me so: *Amy* fell a-laughing at her aloud, as was her usual way; but as *Amy* told me, it was but on one side of her Mouth, for she was so confounded at her Discourse, that she was ready to sink into the Ground; and so was I too, when she told it me.

However, *Amy* brazen'd her out of it all; *told her*, Well, since you think you are so high-born, as to be my Lady *Roxana's* Daughter, you may go to her and claim your Kindred, can't you? I suppose, *says Amy*, you know where to find her? *She said* she did not question to find her, for she knew where she was gone to live privately; but tho' she might be remov'd again, for I know how it is, *says she*, with a kind of a Smile, or a Grin, I know how it all is, well enough.

Amy was so provok'd that she told me, *in short*, she began to think it wou'd be absolutely necessary to murder her: That Expression fill'd me with Horror; all my Blood ran chill in my Veins, and a Fit of trembling seiz'd me, that I could not speak a good-while; at last, What is the Devil in you, *Amy*, *said I*? Nay, nay, *says she*, let it be the Devil, or not the Devil, if I thought she knew one tittle of your History, I wou'd dispatch her if she were my own Daughter a thousand times; and I, *says I in a Rage*, as well as I love you, wou'd be the first that shou'd put the Halter about your Neck and see you hang'd, with more Satisfaction than ever I saw you in my Life; nay, *says I*, you wou'd not live to be hang'd, *I believe*, I should cut your Throat with my own Hand; I am almost ready to do it, *said I*, as 'tis, for your but naming the thing; With that I call'd her cursed Devil, and bade her get out of the Room.

I think it was the first time that ever I was angry with *Amy* in all my Life; and when all was done, tho' she was a devilish Jade in having such a Thought, yet it was all of it the Effect of her Excess of Affection and Fidelity to me.

But this thing gave me a terrible Shock, for it happen'd just after I was marry'd, and serv'd to hasten my going over to *Holland*; for I would not have been seen, so as to be known by the name of *Roxana*, No, not for ten Thou-

sand Pounds; it wou'd have been enough to have ruin'd me to all Intents and Purposes with my Husband, and everybody else too; I might as well have been the *German Princess*.

Well, I set *Amy* to-work; and, give *Amy* her due, she set all her Wits to-work, to find out which way this Girl had her Knowledge; but more particularly, how much Knowledge she had, *that is to say*, what she really knew, and what she did not know; for this was the main thing with me; how she cou'd say she knew who *Madam Roxana* was, and what Notions she had of that Affair was very mysterious to me; for 'twas certain she cou'd not have a right Notion of me, because she wou'd have it be that *Amy* was her Mother.

I scolded heartily at *Amy*, for letting the Girl ever know her, *that is to say*, know her in this Affair; for that she knew her, cou'd not be hid, because she, *as I might say*, serv'd *Amy*, or rather under *Amy*, in my Family, *as is said before*; but she (*Amy*) talk'd with her at first by another Person and not by herself, and that Secret came out by an Accident, *as I have said above*.

Amy was concern'd at it as well as I, but could not help it; and tho' it gave us great Uneasiness, yet as there was no Remedy we were bound to make as little Noise of it as we cou'd, that it might go no further: I bade *Amy* punish the Girl for it, *and she did so*, for she parted with her in a Huff, *and told her*, she shou'd see, she was not her Mother, for that she cou'd leave her just where she found her; and seeing she cou'd not be content to be serv'd by the Kindness of a Friend, but that she wou'd needs make a Mother of her, she wou'd for the future, be neither Mother or Friend; and so bid her go to Service again, and be a Drudge, as she was before.

The poor Girl cry'd most lamentably, but wou'd not be beaten out of it still; but that which dumb-founded *Amy* more than all the rest, was that when she had rated the poor girl a long time, and cou'd not beat her out of it, and had, *as I have observ'd*, threaten'd to leave her; the Girl kept to what she said before, and put this Turn to it again; that she was sure, if *Amy* wasn't, my Lady *Roxana* was, her Mother, and that she would go find her out; *adding*, that she made no doubt but she cou'd do it, for she knew where to enquire the Name of her new Husband.

Amy came home with this Piece of News in her Mouth to me; I cou'd easily perceive when she came in, that she was mad in her Mind, and in a Rage at something or other, and was in great Pain to get it out; for when she came first in, my Husband was in the Room; however, *Amy* going up to undress her, I soon made an Excuse to follow her, and coming into the Room, What the Devil is the matter, *Amy*? *says I*; I am sure you have some bad News: News! *says Amy aloud*, ay, so I have; I think the Devil is in that young Wench—she'll ruin us all, and herself too, there's no quieting her: So she went on and told me all the Particulars; but sure nothing was so astonish'd as I was, when she told me that the Girl knew I was marry'd, that she knew my Husband's Name, and wou'd endeavour to find me out; I thought I shou'd have sunk down at the very Words; in the middle of all my Amazement, *Amy* starts up, and runs about the Room like a distracted body; I'll put an End to it, that I will; I can't bear it; I must murder her; I'll kill her, B ! *and swears by her Maker, in the most serious Tone in the World*; and then repeated it over three or four times, walking to and again in the Room; I will, in short, *I will kill her*, if there was not another Wench in the World.

Prethee hold thy Tongue, *Amy*, says *I*; why, thou art mad; ay, so I am, says *she*, stark mad, but I'll be the Death of her for-all that, and then I shall be sober again; But you shan't, says *I*, you shan't hurt a Hair of her Head; why, you ought to be hang'd for what you have done already; for having resolv'd on it, is doing it, as to the Guilt of the Fact; you are a Murtherer already, as much as if you had done it already.

I know that, says *Amy*, and it can be no worse; I'll put you out of your Pain, and her too; she shall never challenge you for her Mother in this World, whatever she may in the next; Well, well, says *I*, be quiet, and do not talk thus, I can't bear it; so she grew a little soberer after a while.

I must acknowledge, the Notion of being discover'd carried with it so many frightful *Ideas*, and hurry'd my Thoughts so much, that I was scarce myself, any more than *Amy*, so dreadful a thing is a Load of Guilt upon the Mind.

And yet when *Amy* began the second time, to talk thus abominably of killing the poor Child, of murdering her, and swore by her Maker that she would, so that I began to see that she was in earnest, I was terrified a great deal, and it help'd to bring me to myself again in other Cases.

We laid our Heads together then, to see if it was possible to discover by what means she had learn'd to talk so, and how she (*I mean my Girl*) came to know that her mother had marry'd a Husband; but it would not do, the Girl wou'd acknowledge nothing, and gave but a very imperfect Account of things still, being disgusted to the last Degree with *Amy's* leaving her so abruptly as she did.

Well, *Amy* went to the House where the Boy was, but it was all one; there they had only heard a confused story

of the Lady *somebody*, they knew not who, which this same Wench had told them, but they gave no heed to it at all: *Amy* told them how foolishly the Girl had acted, and how she had carried on the Whimsie so far, in spite of all they cou'd say to her; that she had taken it so ill, she wou'd see her no more, and so she might e'en go to Service again if she wou'd, for she (*Amy*) would have nothing to do with her, unless she humbled herself and chang'd her Note, and that quickly too.

The good old Gentleman who had been the benefactor to them all, was greatly concern'd at it, and the good Woman his Wife was griev'd beyond all expressing, and begged her Ladyship, *meaning Amy*, not to resent it, they promis'd too they would talk with her about it; and the old Gentlewoman added, *with some Astonishment*, Sure, she cannot be such a Fool but she will be prevail'd with to hold her Tongue, when she has it from your own Mouth, that you are not her Mother, and sees that it disobliges your Ladyship to have her insist upon it; and so *Amy* came away, with some Expectation that it would be stopp'd here.

But the Girl was such a Fool for-all that, and persisted in it obstinately, notwithstanding all they cou'd say to her nay, her Sister begg'd and entreated her not to play the Fool, for that it wou'd ruin her too, and that the Lady (*meaning Amy*) wou'd abandon them both.

Well, notwithstanding this, she insisted, *I say*, upon it, and which was worse, the longer it lasted the more she began to drop *Amy's* Ladyship, and would have it that the Lady *Roxana* was her Mother; and that she had made some Enquiries about it, and did not doubt but that she shou'd find her out.

When it was come to this, and we found there was

nothing to be done with the Girl, but that she was so obstinately bent upon the Search after me, that she ventur'd to forfeit all she had in view; *I say*, when I found it was come to this, I began to be more serious in my Preparations of my going beyond-Sea; and particularly, it gave me some reason to fear that there was something in it; but the following Accident put me beside all my Measures and struck me into the greatest Confusion that ever I was in, in my Life.

I was so near going Abroad, that my Spouse and I had taken Measures for our going-off; and because I wou'd be sure not to go too publick, but so as to take away all Possibility of being seen, I had made some Exception to my Spouse against going in the ordinary publick Passage Boats; my Pretence to him, was the promiscuous Crowds in those Vessels, want of Convenience, *and the like*; so he took the Hint and found me out an *English* Merchant-Ship which was bound for *Rotterdam*, and getting soon acquainted with the Master, he hired his whole Ship, *that is to say*, his Great-Cabin, for I do not mean his Ship for Freight, that so we had all the Conveniences possible, for our Passage: and all things being near ready, he brought home the Captain one Day to Dinner with him, that I might see him, and be acquainted a little with him; so we came, after Dinner, to talk of the Ship and the Conveniences on-board, and the Captain press'd me earnestly to come on-board and see the Ship, intimating, That he wou'd treat us as well as he cou'd; and in Discourse I happen'd to say I hop'd he had no other Passengers; *he said*, No, he had not; but, *he said*, his Wife had courted him a good-while to let her go over to *Holland* with him, for he always us'd that Trade, but he never cou'd think of venturing all he had in one Bottom. But if I went with him he

thought to take her and her Kinswoman along with him this Voyage, that they might both wait upon me; *and so added*, that if we wou'd do him the Honour to Dine on-board the next Day, he wou'd bring his Wife on board, the better to make us welcome.

Who now cou'd have believed the Devil had any Snare at the Bottom of all this, or that I was in any Danger on such an Occasion so remote and out of the way as this was? But the Event was the oddest that cou'd be thought of: As it happen'd, *Amy* was not at home when we accepted this Invitation, and so she was left out of the Company; but instead of *Amy* we took our honest, good-humour'd, never-to-be-omitted Friend the QUAKER, one of the best Creatures *that ever* liv'd, sure, and who, besides a thousand good Qualities unmix'd with one bad one, was particularly Excellent for being the best Company in the World; tho' I think I had carry'd *Amy* too, if she had not been engag'd in this unhappy Girl's Affair; for on a sudden the Girl was lost, and no News was to be heard of her, and *Amy* had hunted her to every Place she cou'd think of, that it was likely to find her in, but all the News she cou'd hear of her, was, That she was gone to an old Comrade's House of hers, which she call'd Sister, and who was marry'd to a Master of a Ship who liv'd at *Redriff*, and even this the Jade never told me: It seems when this Girl was directed by *Amy* to get her some Breeding, go to the Boarding-School, *and the like*, she was recommended to a Boarding-School at *Camberwell*, and there she contracted an Acquaintance with a young Lady (*so they are all call'd*) her Bedfellow, that they call'd Sisters, and promis'd never to break off their Acquaintance.

But judge you what an unaccountable Surprize I must be in, when I came on-board the Ship, and was brought

into the Captain's Cabbin, or, *what they call it*, the Great-Cabbin of the Ship, to see his Lady or Wife, and another young Person with her, who when I came to see her near-hand was my old Cook-Maid in the Pallmall, and, as appear'd by the Sequel of the Story, was neither more nor less, than my own Daughter; that I knew her, was out of Doubt; for tho' she had not had Opportunity to see me very often, yet I had often seen her, *as I must needs*, being in my own Family so long.

If ever I had need of Courage, and a full Presence of Mind, it was now; it was the only valuable Secret in the World to me; all depended upon this Occasion; if the girl knew me, I was undone; and to discover any Surprise or Disorder, had been to make her know me, or guess it, and discover herself.

I was once going to feign a swooning, and faint away, and so falling on the Ground, or Floor, put them all into a Hurry and Fright, and by that means get an Opportunity to be continually holding something to my Nose to smell to, and so hold my Hand or my Handkerchief, or both, before my Mouth; then pretend, I cou'd not bear the Smell of the Ship or the closeness of the Cabin; but that wou'd have been only to remove into a clearer Air upon the Quarter-Deck, where we shou'd with it, have had a clearer Light too: and if I had pretend'd the Smell of the Ship, it wou'd have serv'd only to have carry'd us all on-shore to the Captain's House, which was hard-by; for the Ship lay so close to the shore, that we only walk'd over a Plank to go on-board, and over another Ship which lay within her; so this not appearing feasible, and the Thought not being two Minutes old, there was no time; for the two Ladies rise up, and we saluted, so that I was bound to come so near *my Girl*, as to kiss her, which I wou'd not

have done, had it been possible to have avoided it; but there was no room to escape.

I cannot but take Notice here, that notwithstanding there was a secret Horror upon my Mind, and I was ready to sink when I came close to her, to salute her; yet it was a secret inconceivable Pleasure to me when I kiss'd her, to know that I kiss'd my own Child, my own Flesh and Blood, born of my Body; and whom I had never kiss'd since I took the fatal Farewel of them all, with a Million of Tears, and a Heart almost dead with Grief, when *Amy* and the Good Woman took them all away, and went with them to Spittle-Fields: No pen can describe, no Words can express, I say, the strange Impression which this thing made upon my Spirits; I felt something shoot thro' my Blood; my Heart flutter'd,; my Head flash'd and was dizzy, and all within me, *as I thought*, turn'd about, and much ado I had, not to abandon myself to an Excess of Passion at the first Sight of her, much more when my Lips touch'd her Face; I thought I must have taken her in my Arms, and kiss'd her again a thousand times, whether I wou'd or no.

But I rous'd up my Judgment, and shook it off, and with infinite Uneasiness in my Mind, I sat down: You will not wonder, if upon this Surprise I was not conversible for some Minutes, and that the Disorder had almost discover'd itself; I had a Complication of severe things upon me; I cou'd not conceal my Disorder without the utmost Difficulty; and yet upon my concealing it, depended the whole of my Prosperity; so I us'd all manner of Violence with myself, to prevent the Mischief which was at the Door.

Well, I saluted her; but as I went first forward to the Captain's Lady, who was at the farther-end of the Cabbin,

towards the Light, I had the Occasion offer'd to stand with my Back to the Light, when I turn'd about to her, who stood more on my Left-hand, so that she had not a fair Sight of me, tho' I was so near her; I trembled, and knew neither what I did, or said; I was in the utmost Extremity between so many particular Circumstances as lay upon me; for I was to conceal my Disorder from everybody, at the utmost Peril, and at the same time expected everybody wou'd discern it; I was to expect she wou'd discover that she knew me, and yet was, by all means possible, to prevent it; I was to conceal myself, if possible, and yet had not the least room to do any-thing towards it; *in short*, there was no retreat; no shifting any-thing off; no avoiding or preventing her having a full Sight of me; nor was there any counterfeiting my Voice, for then my Husband wou'd have perceiv'd it; *in short*, there was not the least Circumstance that offer'd me any Assistance or any favourable thing to help me in this Exigence.

After I had been upon the Rack for near half an Hour, during which I appear'd stiff and reserv'd and a little too formal; my Spouse and the Captain fell into Discourses about the Ship, and the Sea, and Business remote from us Women, and by-and-by the Captain carry'd him out upon the Quarter-Deck and left us all by ourselves, in the Great Cabbin: Then we began to be a little freer with one another, and I began to be a little reviv'd by a sudden Fancy of my own, *namely*, I thought I perceiv'd that the Girl did not know me; and the chief Reason of my having such a Notion, was, because I did not perceive the least Disorder in her Countenance or the least Change in her Carriage; no Confusion, no Hesitation in her Discourse, *nor*, which I had my Eye particularly upon, did I observe

that she fix'd her Eyes much upon me; *that is to say*, not singling me out to look steddily at me, as I thought wou'd have been the Case, but that she rather singled out my Friend the QUAKER and chatted with her on several things, but I observ'd too that it was all about indifferent Matters.

This greatly encourag'd me, and I began to be a little chearful; but I was knock'd down again as with a Thunder-Clap when turning to the Captain's Wife, and discoursing of me, *she said to her*, Sister, I cannot but think (*my Lady*) to be very much like such a Person, then she nam'd the Person; and the Captain's Wife said, *she thought so too*; the Girl reply'd again, *she was sure she had seen me before, but she cou'd not recollect where*; I answer'd (tho' her speech was not directed to me) That *I fancy'd she had not seen me before, in England*, but ask'd, if she had liv'd in *Holland*, She said, *No, no, she had never been out of England*; and I added, That *she cou'd not then have known me in England; unless it was very lately*, for I had liv'd at Rotterdam *a great while*: This carry'd me out of that Part of the Broil, pretty well; and to make it go off the better, when a little *Dutch* Boy came into the Cabbin, who belong'd to the Captain, and who I easily perceiv'd to be *Dutch*, I jested, and talk'd *Dutch* to him, and was merry about the Boy, *that is to say*, as merry as the Consternation I was still in, wou'd let me be.

However, I began to be thorowly convinc'd by this time, that the Girl did not know me, which was an infinite Satisfaction to me; or, *at least*, that tho' she had some Notion of me, yet that she did not think any-thing about my being who I was, and which perhaps, she wou'd have been as glad to have known, as I wou'd have been surpriz'd if she had; indeed, it was evident, that had she sus-

pected anything of the Truth, she would not have been able to have conceal'd it.

Thus this Meeting went off, and, *you may be sure*, I was resolv'd, if once I got off of it, she should never see me again, to revive her Fancy; but I was mistaken there too, *as you shall hear*: After we had been on-board, the Captain's Lady carry'd us home to her House, which was but just on-shore, and treated us there again, very handsomely, and made us promise that we wou'd come again and see her before we went, to concert our Affairs for the Voyage, *and the like*; for she assur'd us, that both she and her Sister, went the Voyage at that time, for our Company; and I thought to myself, *Then you'll never go the Voyage at all*, for I saw from that Moment, that it wou'd be no way convenient for *my Ladyship* to go with them; for that frequent Conversation might bring me to her Mind, and she wou'd certainly claim her Kindred to me in a few Days, as indeed, would have been the Case.

It is hardly possible for me to conceive what wou'd have been our Part in this Affair, had my woman *Amy* gone with me on-board this Ship; it had certainly blown-up the whole Affair, and I must for-ever after have been this Girl's Vassal, *that is to say*, have let her into the Secret, and trusted to her keeping it too, or have been expos'd, and undone; *the very Thought fill'd me with Horror*.

But I was not so unhappy neither, as it fell out, for *Amy* was not with us, and that was my Deliverance indeed: yet we had another Chance to get over still: As I resolv'd to put off the Voyage, so I resolv'd to put off the Visit, *you may be sure*; going upon this Principle, *namely*, that I was fix'd in it, that the Girl had seen her last of me, and shou'd never see me more.

However, to bring myself well off, and withal to see (if

I could) a little further into the Matter, I sent my Friend, the QUAKER to the Captain's Lady, to make the Visit promis'd, and to make my Excuse that I cou'd not possibly wait on her, for that I was very much out of Order; and in the end of the Discourse, I bade her insinuate to them, that she was afraid I shou'd not be able to get ready to go the Voyage, so soon as the Captain would be oblig'd to go, and that perhaps we might put it off to his next Voyage: I did not let the QUAKER into any other Reason for it, than that I was indispos'd, and not knowing what other Face to put upon that Part, I made her believe that I thought I was a-breeding.

It was easie to put that into her Head, and she of course hinted to the Captain's Lady, that she found me very ill, that she was afraid I would miscarry, and then, *to be sure*, I cou'd not think of going.

She went, and she manag'd that part very dexterously, *as I knew she wou'd*, tho' she knew not a word of the grand Reason of my Indisposition; but I was all sunk, and dead-hearted again, when she told me, she cou'd not understand the Meaning of one thing in her Visit, *namely*, That the young Woman, *as she called her*, that was with the Captain's Lady, and whom she call'd Sister, was most impertinently inquisitive into things; as who I was? How long I had been in *England*? Where I had liv'd? *and the like*; and that, *above all the rest*, she enquir'd if I did not live once at the other end of the Town.

I thought her Enquiries so out of the way, *says the honest* QUAKER, that I gave her not the least Satisfaction; but as I saw by thy Answers on-board the Ship, when she talk'd of *thee*, that *thou* did'st not incline to let her be acquainted with *thee*, so I was resolv'd that she shou'd not be much the wiser for me; and when she ask'd me if thou

ever liv'dst *here or there*, I always said No, but that *thou* wast a *Dutch Lady*, and was going home again to *thy* Family, and liv'd Abroad.

I thanked her very heartily for that Part, and indeed she serv'd me in it, more than I let her know she did; *in a word*, she thwarted the Girl so cleverly, that if she had known the whole Affair, she cou'd not have done it better.

But I must acknowledge, all this put me upon the Rack again, and I was quite discourag'd, not at-all doubting but that the Jade had a right Scent of things, and that she knew and remember'd my Face, but had artfully conceal'd her Knowledge of me, till she might perhaps, do it more to my Disadvantage: I told all this to *Amy*, for she was all the Relief I had: The poor Soul (*Amy*) was ready to hang herself, that, *as she said*, she had been the Occasion of it all; and that if I was ruin'd (*which was the word I always us'd to her*), she had ruined me; and she tormented herself about it so much, that I was sometimes fain to comfort her and myself too.

What *Amy* vex'd herself at, was chiefly, that she shou'd be surpriz'd so by the Girl, *as she called her*, I mean surpriz'd into a Discovery of herself to the Girl, which indeed was a false Step of *Amy's*, and so I had often told her; but 'twas to no Purpose to talk of that now; the Business was, how to get clear of the Girl's Suspicions, and of the Girl too, for it look'd more threatning every Day, than another; and if I was uneasie at what *Amy* had told me of her rambling and rattling to her (*Amy*), I had a thousand times as much reason to be uneasie *now* when she had chopp'd upon me so unhappily as this; and not only had seen my Face, but knew *too* where I liv'd, what Name I went by, *and the like*.

And I am not come to the worst of it yet neither; for a few Days after my friend the QUAKER had made her Visit and excus'd me on the account of Indisposition; as if they had done it in over and above Kindness, because they had been told I was not well, they comes both directly to my Lodgings, to visit me; the Captain's Wife, and my Daughter (*who she call'd Sister*), and the Captain to show them the Place; the captain only brought them to the Door, put them in, and went away upon some Business.

Had not the kind QUAKER in a lucky Moment come running in before them, they had not only clapp'd in upon me, in the Parlour, *as it had been a Surprise*, but, which wou'd have been a thousand times worse, had seen *Amy* with me; I think if that had happen'd I had had no Remedy, but to take the Girl by herself, and have made myself known to her, which wou'd have been all Distracti-
tion.

But the QUAKER, a lucky Creature to me, happen'd to see them come to the Door, before they rang the Bell, and instead of going to let them in, came running in, with some Confusion in her Countenance, and told me who was a-coming; at which, *Amy* ran first, and I after her, and bid the QUAKER come up as soon as she had let them in.

I was going to bid her deny me, but it came into my Thoughts, that having been represented so much out of Order, it wou'd have looked very odd; besides, I knew the honest QUAKER, tho' she would do anything else for me, would not Lye for me, and it would have been hard to have desir'd it of her.

After she had let them in, and brought them into the Parlour, she came up to *Amy* and I, who were hardly out

of the Fright, and yet were congratulating one another, that *Amy* was not surpriz'd again.

They paid their Visit in Form, and I receiv'd them as formally; but took Occasion two or three times to hint, that I was so ill that I was afraid I shou'd not be able to go to *Holland*, at least, not so soon as the Captain must go off; and made my Compliment, how sorry I was to be disappointed of the Advantage of their Company and Assistance in the Voyage; and sometimes I talk'd as if I thought I might stay till the Captain return'd, and wou'd be ready to go again; then the QUAKER put in, that then I might be too far gone, *meaning with Child*, that I shou'd not venture at-all; and then (*as if she shou'd be pleas'd with it*) added, She hop'd I wou'd stay and Lye-in at her House; so as this carried its own Face with it, 'twas well enough.

But it was now high-time to talk of this to my Husband, which, however, was not the greatest Difficulty before me: For after this and other Chat had taken up some time, the young Fool began her Tattle again, and two or three times she brought it in, That I was so like a Lady that she had the Honour to know at the other end of the Town, that she cou'd not put that Lady out of her Mind, *when I was by*; and once or twice I fancy'd the Girl was ready to cry; by and by she was at it again; and at last I plainly saw Tears in her Eyes; upon which, *I ask'd her if the Lady was dead, because she seem'd to be in some Concern for her*. She made me much easier by her Answer, than ever she did before: She said, she did not really know, but she believ'd she was dead.

This, *I say*, a little reliev'd my Thoughts, but I was soon down again; for after some time the Jade began to grow Talkative, and as it was plain, that she had told all

that her Head cou'd retain of *Roxana*, and the Days of Joy which I had spent at that Part of the Town, another Accident had like to have blown us all up again.

I was in a kind of *Déshabillé* when they came, having on a loose Robe, like a Morning-Gown, but much after the *Italian* Way; and I had not alter'd it when I went up; only dress'd my Head a little; and as I had been represented as having been lately very ill, so the Dress was becoming enough for a Chamber.

This Morning-Vest or Robe, *call it as you please*, was more shap'd to the Body, than we wear them since, showing the Body in its true Shape, and perhaps, a little too plainly, if it had been to be worn where any Men were to come; but among ourselves it was well enough, especially for hot Weather; the Colour was green, figur'd, and the Stuff a *French* Damask, very rich.

This Gown, or Vest, put the Girl's Tongue a-running again, and her Sister, *as she call'd her*, prompted it; for as they both admir'd my Vest, and were taken up much about the Beauty of the Dress; the charming Damask; the noble Trimming, *and the like*; my Girl puts in a word to the Sister (*Captain's Wife*). This is just such a Thing as I told you, *says she*, the Lady danc'd in: What, *says the Captain's Wife*, the Lady *Roxana* that you told me of? Oh! that's a charming Story, *says she*; tell it *my Lady*; I cou'd not avoid saying so too, tho' from my Soul I wish'd her in Heaven for but naming it; *no*, I won't say but if she had been carried t'other Way, it had been much at one to me, if I cou'd but have been rid of her, and her Story too; for when she came to describe the *Turkish* Dress, it was impossible but the QUAKER who was a sharp, penetrating Creature, shou'd receive the Impression in a more dangerous Manner, than the Girl;

only that indeed, she was not so dangerous a Person; for if she had known it all, I cou'd more freely have trusted her, than I cou'd the Girl, by a great-deal; *nay*, I shou'd have been perfectly easie in her.

However, *as I have said*, her Talk made me dreadfully uneasie, and the more when the Captain's Wife mention'd but the name of *Roxana*; what my Face might do towards betraying me, I knew not, because I cou'd not see myself, but my Heart beat as if it wou'd have jump'd out of my Mouth; and my Passion was so great, that for want of Vent, I thought I shou'd have burst: *In a word*, I was in a kind of a silent Rage, for the Force I was under of restraining my Passion, was such, as I never felt the like of: I had no Vent; nobody to open myself to, or to make a Complaint to for my Relief; I durst not leave the Room by any means, for then she wou'd have told all the Story in my Absence, and I shou'd have been perpetually uneasie to know what she had said, or had not said; so that, *in a word*, I was oblig'd to sit and hear her tell all the story of *Roxana*, *that is to say*, of myself, and not know at the same time, whether she was in earnest or in jest; whether she knew me or no, or, *in short*, whether I was to be expos'd or not expos'd.

She began only in general, with telling where she liv'd; what a Place she had of it, how gallant a Company her Lady had always had in the house; how they us'd to sit up all-Night in the House; gaming and dancing; what a fine Lady her Mistress was; and what a vast deal of Money the upper Servants got; as for her, *she said*, her whole Business was in the next House, so that she got but little; except one Night, that there was twenty Guineas given to be divided among the Servants, when, *she said*, she got two Guineas and a half for her Share.

She went on, and told them how many Servants there was and how they were order'd; but, *she said*, there was one Mrs. *Amy*, who was over them all, and that she, being the Lady's Favourite, got a great-deal; she did not know, *she said*, whether *Amy* was her Christian Name or her Sir-name, but she suppos'd it was her Sir-name; that they were told she got threescore Pieces of Gold at one time, being the same Night that the rest of the Servants had the twenty Guineas divided among them.

I put in at that Word, *and said*, 'twas a vast deal to give away; why, *says I*, 'twas a Portion for a Servant: Oh! Madam! *says she*, it was nothing to what she got afterwards; we that were Servants hated her heartily for it, *that is to say*, we wish'd it had been our Lott in her stead: *Then I said again*, Why, it was enough to get her a good Husband, and settle her for the World, if she had Sence to manage it: So it might, *to be sure*, Madam, *says she*, for we were told she laid up above 500 l. But, *I suppose*, Mrs. *Amy* was too sensible that her Character wou'd require a good Portion to put her off.

Oh, *said I*, if that was the Case, 'twas another thing.

Nay, *says she*, I don't know, but they talk'd very much of a young Lord that was very great with her.

And pray what came of her at last? *said I*; for I was willing to hear a little (*seeing she wou'd talk of it*) what she had to say, as well of *Amy*, as of myself.

I don't know, Madam, *said she*, I never heard of her for several Years till t'other Day I happen'd to see her.

Did you indeed! *says I*, *and made mighty strange of it*; what, and in Rags, it may be, *said I*; that's often the End of such Creatures.

Just the contrary, Madam, *says she*, She came to visit

an Acquaintance of mine, little thinking, *I suppose*, to see me, and I assure you, she came in her Coach.

In her Coach! *said I*; upon my word, she had made her Market then; I suppose *she made Hay while the sun shone*; was she marry'd, pray?

I believe she had been marry'd, Madam, *says she*, but it seems she had been at the *East-Indies*, and if she was marry'd, it was there, *to be sure*. I think she said she had good luck in the *Indies*.

That is, I suppose, *said I*, had buried her Husband there.

I understand it so, Madam, *says she*, and that she had got his Estate.

Was that her good Luck? *said I*. It might be good to her, as to the Money indeed, but it was but the Part of a Jade to call it good Luck.

Thus far our Discourse of Mrs. *Amy* went, and no further, for she knew no more of her; but then the QUAKER unhappily, tho' undesignedly, put in a Question, which the honest, good-humour'd Creature wou'd have been far from doing, if she had known that I had carry'd on the Discourse of *Amy*, on purpose to drop *Roxana* out of the Conversation.

But I was not to be made easy too soon; The QUAKER put in, But I think *thou* saidst something was behind of *thy* Mistress; what did'st thou call her: *Roxana*, was it not? Pray what became of her?

Ay, ay, *Roxana*, *says the Captain's Wife*; pray Sister, let's hear the Story of *Roxana*; it will divert *my Lady*, I'm sure.

That's a damn'd Lye, *said I to myself*; if you knew how little 'twould divert me, you wou'd have too much Advantage over me: Well, I saw no Remedy, but the

Story must come on, so I prepar'd to hear the worst of it.

Roxana! says she, I know not what to say of her; she was so much above us, and so seldom seen, that we cou'd know little of her, but by Report, but we did sometimes see her too; she was a charming Woman indeed; and the Footmen us'd to say that she was to be sent for to Court.

To Court, *said I*, why, she was at Court, wasn't she? *The Pallmall* is not far from *Whiteball*.

Yes, Madam, *says she*, but I mean another way.

I understand thee, *says the QUAKER*. *Thou* meanest, *I suppose*, to be Mistress to the KING;

Yes, Madam, *says she*.

I cannot help confessing what a Reserve of Pride still was left in me; and tho' I dreaded the Sequel of the Story, yet when she talk'd how handsome and how fine a Lady this *Roxana* was, I cou'd not help being pleas'd and tickl'd with it; and put in Questions two or three times, of how handsome she was? and was she really so fine a Woman as they talk'd of? *and the like*, on purpose to hear her repeat what the People's Opinion of me was, and how I had behav'd.

Indeed, *says she at last*, she was a most beautiful Creature, as ever I saw in my Life: But then, *said I*, you never had the Opportunity to see her, but when she was set out to the best Advantage.

Yes, yes, Madam, *says she*, I have seen her several times in her *Désabillé*, and I can assure you, she was a very fine Woman; and that which was more still, everybody said she did not paint.

This was still agreeable to me one way; but there was a devilish Sting in the Tail of it all, and this last Article was one; wherein *she said*, she had seen me several times in

my *Désabillé*. This put me in Mind, that then she must certainly know me, and it would come out at last, which was Death to me but to think of.

Well, but, Sister, *says the captain's wife*, tell my Lady about the Ball, that's the best of all the Story, and of *Roxana's* dancing in a fine Outlandish Dress.

That's one of the brightest Parts of her Story indeed, *says the Girl*; the Case was this: We had Balls and Meetings in her Ladyship's Apartments, every Week almost, but one time my Lady invited all the Nobles to come such a time and she wou'd give them a Ball; and there was a vast Crowd indeed, *says she*.

I think you said, the KING was there, Sister, didn't you?

No, Madam, *says she*, that was the second time, when *they said* the KING had heard how finely the *Turkish* Lady danc'd, and that he was there to see her; but the KING, if His Majesty was there, came disguis'd.

That is what they call *Incog.*, *says my Friend the QUAKER*; thou canst not think the KING would disguise himself; yes, *says the Girl*, it was so; he did not come in Publick with his Guards, but we all knew which was the KING, well enough; *that is to say*, which they said was the KING.

Well, *says the Captain's wife*, about the *Turkish* Dress; pray let us hear that: Why, *says she*, my Lady sat in a fine little Drawing-room, which opened into the Great Room, and where she receiv'd the Compliments of the Company; and when the Dancing began, a great Lord, *says she*, *I forget who they call'd him* (but he was a very great Lord or Duke, I don't know which), took her out, and danc'd with her; but after a-while my Lady on a sudden shut the Drawing-Room, and ran up-stairs with her

Woman Mrs. Amy, and tho' she did not stay long, (*for I suppose she had contriv'd it all beforehand*), she came down dress'd in the strangest Figure that ever I saw in my Life; but it was exceeding fine.

Here she went on to describe the Dress, as I have done already; but did it so exactly, that I was surpriz'd at the Manner of her telling it; there was not a Circumstance of it left out.

I was now under a new Perplexity, for this young Slut gave so compleat an account of everything in the Dress, that my Friend the QUAKER colour'd at it, and look'd two or three times at me, to see if I did not do so too; for (*as she told me afterwards*) she immediately perceiv'd it was the same Dress that she had seen me have on, *as I have said before*: However, as she saw I took no Notice of it, she kept her Thoughts private to herself; and I did so too, as well as I cou'd.

I put in two or three times, that she had a good Memory, that could be so particular in every Part of such a thing.

Oh, Madam! *says she*, we that were Servants, stood by ourselves in a Corner, but so as we cou'd see more than some Strangers; besides, *says she*, it was all our Conversation for several Days in the Family, and what one did not observe, another did; Why, *says I to her*, this was no Persian Dress; only, *I suppose*, your Lady was some French Comedian, *that is to say*, a Stage Amazon, that put on a counterfeit Dress to please the Company, such as they us'd in the play of *Tamerlane* at Paris, or some such.

No, indeed, Madam, *says she*, *I assure you*, my Lady was no Actress; she was a fine modest Lady, fit to be a Princess; every-body said, if she was a Mistress, she was fit to be a Mistress to none but the KING, and they talk'd

her up for the KING as if it had really been so: Besides, Madam, *says she*, my Lady danc'd a *Turkish* Dance, all the Lords and Gentry said it was so; and one of them swore, *he had seen it danc'd in Turkey himself*; so that it cou'd not come from the Theatre at *Paris*; and then the Name *Roxana*, *says she*, was a *Turkish* Name.

Well, *said I*, but that was not your Lady's Name, *I suppose*.

No, no, Madam, *said she*, I know that; I know my Lady's Name and Family very well; *Roxana* was not her Name, that's true indeed.

Here she ran me a-ground again, for I durst not ask her what was *Roxana's* real Name, lest she had really dealt with the Devil, and had boldly given my own Name in for Answer: So that I was still more and more afraid that the Girl had really gotten the Secret somewhere or other; tho' I could not imagine neither, how that cou'd be.

In a word, I was sick of the Discourse, and endeavour'd many ways to put an End to it, but it was impossible; for the Captain's Wife, *who call'd her Sister*, prompted her, and press'd her to tell it, most ignorantly thinking that it would be a pleasant Tale to all of us.

Two or three times the QUAKER put in, That this Lady *Roxana* had a good Stock of Assurance, and that 'twas likely, if she had been in *Turkey*, she had liv'd with, or been kept by some great *Bassa* there: But still she wou'd break-in upon all such Discourse, and fly-out into the most extravagant Praises of her Mistress, the fam'd *Roxana*. I run her down, as some scandalous Woman; that it was not possible to be otherwise; but she wou'd not hear of it; her Lady was a Person of such and such Qualifications; that nothing but an Angel was like her,

to be sure; and yet, after all she cou'd say, her own Account brought her down to this, That, in short, her Lady kept little less than a Gaming-Ordinary; or, as it wou'd be called in the Times since that, an Assembly for Gallantry and Play.

All this while I was very uneasie, *as I said before*, and yet the whole Story went off again without any Discovery, only that I seem'd a little concern'd, that she shou'd liken me to this gay Lady, whose Character I pretended to run down very much, even upon the foot of her own Relation.

But I was not at the End of my Mortifications yet neither, for now my innocent QUAKER threw out an unhappy Expression, which put me upon the Tenters again: *Says she to me, This Lady's Habit, I fancy, is just such-a one as thine, by the Description of it; and then turning to the Captain's Wife, says she, I fancy, my friend has a finer Turkish or Persian Dress, a great-deal: Oh! says the Girl, 'tis impossible to be finer; my Lady's, says she, was all cover'd with Gold and Diamonds; Her hair and Head-Dress, I forgot the Name they gave it, says she, shone like the Stars, there was so many Jewels in it.*

I never wish'd my good Friend the QUAKER out of my Company before *now*, but indeed, I wou'd have given some Guineas to have been rid of her *just now*; for beginning to be curious in the comparing the two Dresses, she innocently began a Description of *Mine*; and nothing terrify'd me so much as the Apprehension lest she shou'd importune me to show it, which I was resolv'd I wou'd never agree to.

But before it came to this, she press'd my *Girl* to describe the *Tybiaai*, or Head-Dress; which she did so cleverly, that the QUAKER cou'd not help saying, *Mine*

was just such a-one; and after several other Similitudes, all very vexatious to me, out comes the kind Motion to me, *to let the Ladies see my Dress*; and they join'd their eager Desires of it, even to Importunity.

I desir'd to be excus'd, tho' I had little to say at first why I declin'd it; but at last, it came into my Head to say, it was pack'd up with my other Cloaths that I had least Occasion for, in order to be sent on-board the Captain's Ship, but that if we liv'd to come to *Holland* together (which, *by the way*, I resolv'd shou'd never happen), then, *I told them*, at unpacking my Cloaths they shou'd see me dress'd in it; but they must not expect I shou'd dance in it, like the Lady *Roxana*, in all her fine things.

This carry'd it off pretty well; and getting over this got over most of the rest, and I began to be easie again; and, *in a word*, that I may dismiss the Story too, as soon as may be, I got-rid at last of my Visitors, whom I had wish'd gone two Hours sooner than they intended it.

As soon as they were gone, I ran up to *Amy*, and gave Vent to my Passions by telling her the whole Story, and letting her see what Mischiefs one false Step of hers had like, unluckily, to have involv'd us all in, more perhaps, than we cou'd ever have liv'd to get through: *Amy* was sensible of it enough, and was just giving her Wrath a Vent another way, *viz.* by calling the poor Girl all the damn'd Jades and Fools (*and sometimes worse names*) that she cou'd think of; in the middle of which, up comes my honest good QUAKER and puts an end to our Discourse. The QUAKER came in smiling, (for she was always soberly chearful). *Well*, says she, *Thou art deliver'd at last, I come to joy thee of it; I perceived thou wert tir'd grievously of thy Visitors.*

Indeed, says I, *so I was*; that foolish young Girl held

us all in a *Canterbury Story*, I thought she wou'd never have done with it: Why truly, I thought she was very careful to let *thee* know she was but a Cookmaid: Ay, *says I*, and at a Gaming-House, or Gaming-Ordinary, and at t'other end of the Town too; all which (*by the way*) she might know, wou'd add very little to her Good-Name among us Citizens.

I can't think, *says the* QUAKER, but she had some other Drift in that long Discourse; there's something else in her Head, *says she*, I am satisfy'd of that: *Thought I*, Are you satisfy'd of it: I am sure I am the less satisfy'd for that; *at least*, 'tis but small Satisfaction to me, to hear you say so: What can this be? *says I*; and when will my Uneasinesses have an end? *But this was silent, and to myself, you may be sure*: But in answer to my friend the QUAKER, I return'd by asking her a Question or two about it: As what she thought was in it? and why she thought there was any-thing in it? for, *says I*, she can have nothing in it relating to me.

Nay, *says the kind* QUAKER, if she had any View towards *thee*, that's no Business of mine; and I shou'd be far from desiring *thee* to inform me.

This alarm'd me again; not that I fear'd trusting the good-humour'd Creature with it if there had been any-thing of just Suspicion in her; but this Affair was a Secret I car'd not to communicate to any-body: However, *I say*, this alarm'd me a little; for as I had conceal'd every-thing from her, I was willing to do so still; but as she cou'd not but gather up abundance of things from the Girl's Discourse, which look'd towards me, so she was too penetrating to be put-off with such Answers, as might stop another's Mouth: Only there was this double Felicity in it: *first*, That she was not Inquisitive to know,

or find any-thing out; and not dangerous, if she had known the whole Story: But, *as I say*, she cou'd not but gather up several Circumstances from the Girl's Discourse; as particularly the Name of *Amy*; and the several Descriptions of the *Turkish* Dress, which my Friend the QUAKER had seen, and taken so much Notice of, *as I have said above*.

As for that, I might have turn'd it off by jesting with *Amy*, and asking her, who she liv'd with before she came to live with me? but that wou'd not do; for we had unhappily, anticipated that way of talking, by having often talk'd how long *Amy* had liv'd with me; and which was still worse, by having own'd formerly that I had had Lodgings in the *Pallmall*; so that all those things corresponded too well: There was only one thing that help'd me out with the QUAKER, and that was the Girl's having reported how rich Mrs. *Amy* was grown, and that she kept her Coach; now as there might be many more Mrs. *Amy's* besides *mine*, so it was not likely to be my *Amy*, because she was far from such a Figure as keeping her Coach; and this carry'd it off from the Suspicions which the good, friendly QUAKER might have in her head.

But as to what she imagin'd the Girl had in her Head, there lay more real Difficulty in that Part, a great-deal; and I was alarm'd at it very much; for my Friend the QUAKER told me she observ'd that the *Girl* was in a great Passion when she talk'd of the Habit, and more when I had been importun'd to show her mine, but declin'd it: *She said*, She several times perceiv'd her to be in Disorder, and to restrain herself with great Difficulty; and once or twice she mutter'd to herself, that *she had found it out*, or, *that she would find it out*, she cou'd not tell whether; and that she often saw Tears in her Eyes; that

when I said my Suit of *Turkish* Cloaths was put up, but that she shou'd see it when we arriv'd in *Holland*, she heard her say softly, She *wou'd go over on purpose then*.

After she had ended her Observations, *I added*, I observ'd too, that *the Girl* talk'd and look'd oddly, and that she was mighty Inquisitive, but I cou'd not imagine what it was she aim'd at: Aim'd at, says the QUAKER, 'tis plain to me what she aims at; she believes *thou* art the same Lady *Roxana* that danc'd in the *Turkish* Vest, but she is not certain: Does she believe so! says *I*; If I had thought that, I wou'd have put her out of her Pain: Believeso! says *the* QUAKER, Yes; and I began to believe so too, and should have believ'd so still, if thou hadst not satisfy'd me to the contrary, by *thy* taking no Notice of it and by what *thou* hast said since: Shou'd you have believ'd so? said *I*, warmly, I am very sorry for that; why, wou'd you have taken me for an Actress, or a *French Stage-Player*? No, says *the good, kind, creature*, thou carry'st it too far; as soon as thou mad'st thy Reflections upon her, I knew it cou'd not be; but who cou'd think any other, when she describ'd the *Turkish* Dress which *thou* hast here, with the Head-Tire and Jewels; and when she nam'd *thy* Maid *Amy* too, and several other Circumstances concurring? I shou'd certainly have believ'd it, said she, if *thou* had'st not contradicted it; but as soon as I heard *thee* speak, I concluded it was otherwise: That was very kind, said *I*, and I am oblig'd to you for doing me so much Justice; 'tis more, it seems, than that young talking Creature does: Nay, says *the* QUAKER, indeed she does not do *thee* Justice; for she as certainly believes it still, as ever she did: Does she, said *I*. Ay, says *the* QUAKER, and I warrant *thee* she'll make *thee* another Visit about it: Will she, says *I*? then I believe I shall downright

affront her: No, *thou* shalt not affront her, *says she* (full of her good humour and Temper), I'll take that Part off thy hands, for I'll affront her for *thee*, and not let her *see* thee. I thought that was a very kind Offer, but was at a Loss how she wou'd be able to do it; and the Thought of seeing her there again, half distracted me; not knowing what Temper she wou'd come in, much less what Manner to receive her in; but my fast Friend, and constant Comforter, the QUAKER said she perceiv'd the *Girl* was impertinent, and that I had no Inclination to converse with her: and she was resolv'd I shou'd not be troubled with her: But I shall have occasion to say more of this presently; for this *Girl* went further yet, than I thought she had.

It was now time, *as I said before*, to take Measures with my Husband, in order to put off my Voyage; so I fell into Talk with him one Morning as he was dressing, and while I was in-Bed; I pretended I was very ill; and as I had but too easie a Way, to impose upon him, because he so absolutely believ'd every-thing I said; so I manag'd my Discourse so, as that he should understand by it, I was a-breeding, though I did not tell him so.

However, I brought it about so handsomely, that before he went out of the Room, he came and sat down by my Bedside, and began to talk very seriously to me, upon the Subject of my being so every-Day ill; and that as he hop'd I was with-Child, he wou'd have me consider well of it, whether I had not best alter my Thoughts of the Voyage to *Holland*; for that being Sea-sick, and which was worse, if a Storm shou'd happen, might be very dangerous to me; And after saying abundance of the kindest things that the Kindest of Husbands in the world cou'd say, he concluded, That it was his Request to me, that I wou'd not think any-more of going, till after all shou'd

be over; but that I wou'd, *on the contrary*, prepare to Lye-in where I was, and where I knew as well as he, I could be very well provided, and very well assisted.

This was just what I wanted; for I had, *as you have heard*, a thousand good Reasons why I shou'd put off the Voyage, *especially*, with that Creature in Company; but I had a-mind the putting it off shou'd be at his Motion, not my own; and he came into it of himself, just as I wou'd have had it: This gave me an Opportunity to hang-back a little, and to seem as if I was unwilling: *I told him*, I could not abide to put him to Difficulties and Perplexities in his Business; that now he had hir'd the Great-Cabbin in the Ship, and perhaps, paid some of the Money, and, *it may be*, taken Freight for Goods; and to make him break it all off again, wou'd be a needless Charge to him, *or perhaps*, a Damage to the Captain.

As to that, *he said*, it was not to be nam'd, and he wou'd not allow it to be any Consideration at all; that he cou'd easily pacify the Captain of the Ship, by telling him the Reason of it; and that if he did make him some Satisfaction for the Disappointment, it shou'd not be much.

But my Dear, *says I*, you ha'nt heard me say I am with-Child, neither can I say so; and if it shou'd not be so at last, then I shall have made a fine Piece of Work of it indeed; beside, *says I*, the two Ladies, the Captain's Wife and her Sister, they depend upon our going over, and have made great Preparations, and all in Compliment to me; what must I say to them?

Well, my Dear, *says he*, if you shou'd not be with-Child, tho' I hope you are, yet there is no harm done; the staying three or four Months longer in *England* will be

no Damage to me, and we can go when we please, when we are sure you are not with-Child, or when it appearing that you are with-Child, you shall be down and up again; and as for the Captain's Wife and Sister, leave that Part to me, I'll answer for it, there shall be no Quarrel rais'd upon that subject; I'll make your Excuse to them by the Captain himself; so all will be well enough there, I'll warrant you.

This was as much as I could desire; and thus it rested for a-while: I had indeed some anxious Thoughts about this impertinent Girl, but believ'd that putting off the Voyage wou'd have put an end to it all; so I began to be pretty easie, but I found myself mistaken, for I was brought to the Point of Destruction by her again, and that in the most unaccountable Manner imaginable.

My Husband, as he and I had agreed, meeting the Captain of the Ship, took the Freedom to tell him, That he was afraid he must disappoint him, for that something had fallen out, which had oblig'd him to alter his Measures, and that his Family cou'd not be ready to go, time enough for him.

I know the Occasion, Sir, *says the Captain*. I hear your Lady has got a Daughter more than she expected; I give you Joy of it: What do you mean by that? *says my spouse*. Nay, nothing, *says the Captain*, but what I hear the Women tattle over the Tea-Table; I know nothing, but that you don't go the Voyage upon it, which I am sorry for; But you know your own Affairs, *added the Captain*, that's no Business of mine.

Well but, *says my Husband*, I must make you some Satisfaction for the Disappointment, and so pulls out his Money: No, no, *says the Captain*, and so they fell to straining their Compliments one upon another; but, *in*

short, my Spouse gave him three or four Guineas, and made him take it; and so the first Discourse went off again, and they had no more of it.

But it did not go off so easily with me; for now, *in a word*, the Clouds began to thicken about me, and I had Allarms on every side: My Husband told me what the Captain had said; but very happily took it, that the Captain had brought a Tale by-halves, and, having heard it one way, had told it another; and that neither cou'd he understand the Captain, neither did the captain understand himself; so he contented himself to tell me, *he said*, word for word, as the Captain deliver'd it.

How I kept my Husband from discovering my Disorder, *you shall hear presently*; but let it suffice to say just now, that if my Husband did not understand the Captain, nor the Captain understand himself, yet I understood them both very well; and to tell the Truth, it was a worse Shock than ever I had had yet: Invention supply'd me indeed, with a sudden Motion to avoid showing my Surprise; for as my Spouse and I were sitting by a little Table, near the Fire, I reach'd out my Hand, as if I had intended to take a Spoon which lay on the other side, and threw one of the Candles off of the Table; and then snatching it up, started up upon my Feet, and stoop'd to the Lap of my Gown, and took it in my Hand; O! *says I*, my Gown's spoil'd; the Candle has greas'd it prodigiously: This furnish'd me with an Excuse to my Spouse, to break off the Discourse for the present, and call *Amy* down; And *Amy* not coming presently, *I said to him*, My Dear, I must run upstairs, and put it off, and let *Amy* clean it a little; so my Husband rose up too, and went into a Closet, where he kept his Papers and Books, and fetch'd a Book out, and sat down by himself, to read.

Glad I was that I had got away; and up I ran to *Amy*, who, as it happen'd, was alone; O *Amy*! *says I*, we are all utterly undone; and with that, I burst out a-crying, and cou'd not speak a Word for a great while.

I cannot help saying that some very good Reflections offer'd themselves upon this Head; it presently occur'd, What a glorious Testimony it is to the Justice of Providence, and to the Concern Providence has in guiding all the Affairs of Men (*even the least, as well as the greatest*), that the most secret Crimes are, by the most unforeseen Accidents, brought to light, and discover'd.

Another Reflection was, How just it is, that Sin and Shame follow one-another so constantly at the Heels, that they are not like Attendants only, but like Cause and Consequence, necessarily connected one with another; that the Crume going before, the Scandal is certain to follow; and that 'tis not in the Power of humane Nature to conceal the first, or avoid the last.

What shall I do? *Amy*, said I, *as soon as I could speak*; and what will become of me? and then I cry'd again so vehemently, that I cou'd say no more a great-while; *Amy* was frighted almost out of her Wits, but knew nothing what the Matter was; but she begg'd to know, and perswaded me to compose myself, and not cry so: Why Madam, if my Master shou'd come up now, *says she*, he will see what a Disorder you are in; he will know you have been crying, and then he will want to know the cause of it; with that I broke-out again. O! he knows it already, *Amy*, *says I*; he knows all! 'tis all discovered! and we are undone! *Amy* was Thunder-Struck now indeed: Nay, *says Amy*, if that be true, we are undone indeed; but that can never be; that's impossible, I'm sure.

No, no, says I, 'tis far from impossible, for I tell you 'tis

so; and by this time being a little recover'd, I told her what Discourse my Husband and the Captain had had together, and what the Captain had said: This put *Amy* into such a Hurry, that she cry'd, she rav'd, she swore and curs'd like a Mad-thing; then she upbraided me, that I wou'd not let her kill the Girl when she wou'd have done it; and that it was all my own doing, *and the like*: Well, however, I was not for killing the Girl yet, I cou'd not bear the Thoughts of that neither.

We spent half an Hour in these Extravagances, and brought nothing out of them neither; for indeed we cou'd do nothing, or say nothing, that was to the Purpose: for if any-thing was to come out-of-the-way, there was no hindring it, nor help for it; so after thus giving a Vent to myself by crying, I began to reflect how I had left my Spouse below, and what I had pretended to come up for; so I chang'd my gown that I pretended the Candle fell upon, and put on another and went down.

When I had been down a good-while, and found my Spouse did not fall into the Story again, as I expected, I took-heart and call'd for it: My dear, *said I*, the Fall of the Candle put you out of your History; won't you go on with it? What, History? *says he*. Why, *says I*, about the Captain. O! *says he*, I had done with it; I know no more, than that the captain told a broken Piece of News that he had heard by halves, and told more by halves than he heard it; *namely*, of your being with-Child, and that you cou'd not go the Voyage.

I perceiv'd my Husband enter'd not into the thing at-all, but took it for a Story, which, being told two or three times over, was puzzl'd and come to nothing; and that all that was meant by it was, what he knew, or thought he

knew already, *viz.* that I was with-Child, which he wish'd might be true.

His Ignorance was Cordial to my Soul; and I curs'd them in my Thoughts that shou'd ever undeceive him; and as I saw him willing to have the Story end there, as not worth being further mention'd, I closed it too; *and said*, I suppos'd the Captain had it from his Wife; she might have found somebody else to make her Remarks upon; and so it pass'd off with my Husband well enough, and I was still safe there, where I thought myself in most Danger; but I had two Uneasinesses still: *the first* was, lest the Captain and my Spouse shou'd meet again and enter into further Discourse about it; and *the second* was, lest the busie, impertinent Girl shou'd come again, and when she came, how to prevent her seeing *Amy*, which was an Article as material as any of the rest; for seeing *Amy* wou'd have been as fatal to me, as her knowing all the rest.

As to the *first* of these, I knew the Captain cou'd not stay in Town above a Week, but that his Ship being already full of Goods, and fallen down the River, he must soon follow; so I contriv'd to carry my Husband somewhere out of Town for a few Days, that they might be sure not to meet.

My greatest Concern was, where we shou'd go; At last I fix'd upon *North-Halls*, not, *I said*; that I wou'd drink the Waters, but that, I thought the Air was good, and might be for my Advantage: He, who did every-thing upon the Foundation of obliging me, readily came into it, and the Coach was appointed to be ready the next Morning; but as we were settling Matters, he put in an ugly Word that thwarted all my Design; and that was, That he had rather I wou'd stay till Afternoon, for that

he shou'd speak to the Captain next Morning, if he cou'd, to give him some Letters; which he cou'd do and be back again about Twelve a-Clock.

I said, Ay, by all means; but it was but a Cheat on him, and my Voice and my Heart differ'd, for I resolv'd, *if possible*, he shou'd not come near the Captain nor see him, whatever came of it.

In the Evening therefore, a little before we went to-Bed, I pretended to have alter'd my Mind, and that I would not go to *North-Hall*, but I had a mind to go another-way, *but I told him*, I was afraid his Business wou'd not permit him; he wanted to know where it was? *I told him, smiling*, I wou'd not tell him, lest it shou'd oblige him to hinder his Business: *He answer'd*, with the same Temper, *but with infinitely more Sincerity*, That he had no Business of so much Consequence, as to hinder him going with me any-where that I had a mind to go: *Yes*, says I, *you want to speak with the Captain before he goes away*: Why that's true, *says he*, *so I do*, and paus'd a while; and *then added*, But I'll write a Note to a Man that does Business for me, to go to him; 'tis only to get some Bills of Loading sign'd, and he can do it: When I saw I had gain'd my Point I seem'd to hang back a little; my Dear, *says I*, don't hinder an Hour's Business for me; I can put it off for a Week or two, rather than you shall do yourself any Prejudice: *No, no*, *says he*, you shall not put it off an Hour for me, for I can do my Business by Proxy with any-body, *but my WIFE*; and *then he took me in his arms and kiss'd me*: How did my Blood flush up into my Face! when I reflected how sincerely, how affectionately this good-humour'd Gentleman embrac'd the most cursed Piece of Hypocrisy that ever came into the Arms of an honest Man? His was all Tenderness, all Kindness, and

the utmost Sincerity; Mine all Grimace and Deceit; a Piece of meer Manage, and fram'd Conduct, to conceal a pass'd Life of Wickedness, and prevent his discovering, that he had in his Arms a She-Devil, whose whole Conversation for twenty-five Years had been black as Hell, a Complication of Crime; and for which, had he been let into it, he must have abhorr'd me, and the very mention of my Name: But there was no help for me in it; all I had to satisfy myself was, that it was my Business to be what I was, and conceal what I had been; that all the Satisfaction I could make him, was to live virtuously for the Time to come, not being able to retrieve what had been in Time past; and this I resolv'd upon, tho' had the great Temptation offer'd, as it did afterwards, I had reason to question my Stability: *But of that hereafter.*

After my Husband had kindly thus given up his Measures to mine, we resolv'd to set-out in the Morning early; *I told him*, that my Project, *if he lik'd it*, was, to go to *Tunbridge*; and he, being entirely passive in the thing, agreed to it with the greatest willingness; *but said* If I had not nam'd *Tunbridge*, he wou'd have nam'd *Newmarket*; (*there being a great COURT there, and abundance of fine things to be seen*) I offer'd him another Piece of Hypocrisie here, for I pretended to be willing to go thither, *as the Place of his Choice*, but indeed, I wou'd not have gone for a Thousand Pounds; for the Court being there at that time, I durst not run the Hazard of being known at a Place where there were so many Eyes that had seen me before: So that, *after some time*, I told my Husband, that I thought *Newmarket* was so full of People at that time, that we shou'd get no Accommodation; that seeing the COURT, and the Crowd, was no Entertainment at-all to me, unless as it might be so to him; that if he thought fit,

we would rather put it off to another time; and that if, when we went to *Holland*, we shou'd go by *Harwich*, we might take a round by *Newmarket* and *Bury*, and so come down to *Ipswich*, and go from thence to the Sea-side. He was easily put-off from this, as he was from anything else, that I did not approve; and so with all imaginable Facility he appointed to be ready early in the Morning, to go with me for *Tunbridge*.

I had a double Design in this, *viz.* *First*, to get away my Spouse from seeing the Captain any more; and *secondly*, To be out of the way myself, in case this impertinent Girl, *who was now my Plague*, shou'd offer to come again, *as my friend the QUAKER believ'd she wou'd*; and as indeed happen'd within two or three Days afterwards.

Having thus secur'd my going away the next Day, I had nothing to do but to furnish my faithful Agent the QUAKER with some Instructions, what to say to this *Tormentor* (for such she prov'd afterwards), and how to manage her, if she made any more Visits than ordinary.

I had a great-mind to leave *Amy* behind too, as an Assistant, because she understood so perfectly well, what to advise upon any Emergence; and *Amy* importun'd me to do so, but I know not what secret Impulse prevail'd over my Thoughts against it, I cou'd not do it, for fear the wicked Jade should make her away, which my very soul abhorr'd the Thoughts of; which, however, *Amy* found Means to bring to pass afterwards; *as I may in time relate more particularly*.

It is true, I wanted as much to be deliver'd from her, as ever a Sick-Man did from a Third-Day Ague, and had she dropp'd into the Grave by any fair Way, *as I may call it*; I mean had she died by any ordinary Distemper—I shou'd have shed but very few Tears for her: But I was

not arriv'd to such a Pitch of obstinate Wickedness, as to commit Murther, especially such, as to murder my own Child, or so much as to harbour a Thought so barbarous, in my Mind: But, *as I said*, Amy effected all afterwards, without my Knowledge, for which I gave her my hearty Curse, tho' I could do little more; for to have fallen upon Amy had been to have murder'd myself; But this Tragedy requires a longer Story than I have room for here: *I return to my Journey.*

My dear Friend, the QUAKER was kind, and yet honest, and wou'd do anything that was just and upright, to serve me, but nothing wicked or dishonourable; that she might be able to say boldly to the Creature, if she came, she did not know where I was gone, she desir'd I wou'd not let her know; and to make her Ignorance the more absolutely safe to herself, and likewise to me, I allow'd her to say that she heard us talk of going to *Newmarket*, &c. She lik'd that Part, and I left all the rest to her, to act as she thought fit, only charg'd her that if the girl entered into the Story of the *Pallmall*, she shou'd not entertain much Talk about it, but let her understand, that we all thought she spoke of it a little too particularly; and that the Lady (*meaning me*, took it a little ill, to be so liken'd to a publick Mistress, or a Stage-Player, *and the like*; and so bring her, *if possible*, to say no more of it: However, tho' I did not tell my Friend the QUAKER how to write to me, or where I was, yet I left a seal'd Paper with her Maid to give her, in which I gave her a Direction how to write to *Amy*, and so in effect, to myself.

It was but a few Days after I was gone, but the impatient Girl came to my Lodgings, on Pretence to see how I did, and to hear if I intended to go the Voyage, *and the like*: My trusty Agent was at-home, and receiv'd her

coldly at the Door; *but told her*, That the lady, which she suppos'd she meant, was gone from her House.

This was a full Stop to all she cou'd say for a good-while; but as she stood musing some time at the Door, considering what to begin a Talk upon, she perceiv'd my Friend the QUAKER looked a little uneasie, as if she wanted to go in, and shut the Door, which stung her to the quick; and the wary QUAKER had not so much as ask'd her to come in; for seeing her alone, she expected she wou'd be very Impertinent; and concluded, that I did not care how coldly she receiv'd her.

But she was not to be put off so: *She said*, If the Lady —— was not to be spoken with, she desir'd to speak two or three Words with her, *meaning my friend the QUAKER*. Upon that, the QUAKER civilly, *but coldly*, ask'd her to walk in, which was what she wanted; *Note*, She did not carry her into her best Parlour, *as formerly*, but into a little outer-Room where the Servants usually waited.

By the first of her Discourse she did not stick to insinuate, as if she believ'd I was in the House but was unwilling to be seen; and press'd earnestly that she might speak but two Words with me; to which she added earnest Entreaties, and at last Tears.

I am sorry, *says my good Creature the QUAKER*, *thou* hast so ill an Opinion of me as to think I would tell *thee* an Untruth, *and say*, that the Lady —— was gone from my House, if she was not? I assure thee I do not use any such Method, nor does the Lady —— desire any such kind of Service from me, as I know of: If she had been in the House, I shou'd have told thee so.

She said little to that, but said it was Business of the utmost Importance, that she desir'd to speak with me about; *and then cry'd again very much*.

Thou seem'st to be sorely afflicted, says the QUAKER, I wish I cou'd give thee any Relief; but if nothing will comfort thee but seeing the Lady —, it is not in my Power.

I hope it is, *says she again*; to be sure it is of great Consequence to me, so much, that I am undone without it.

Thou troubl'st me very much, to hear thee say so, says the QUAKER; but why then did'st thou not speak to her apart, when *thou* wast here before?

I had no Opportunity, *says she*, to speak to her alone, and I cou'd not do it in Company; if I cou'd have spoken but two words to her alone, I wou'd have thrown myself at her Foot and ask'd her Blessing.

I am surpriz'd at thee; I do not understand *thee*, says the QUAKER.

O! *says she*, stand my Friend, if you have any Charity, or if you have any Compassion for the Miserable, for I am utterly undone!

Thou terrify'st me, *says the QUAKER*, with such passionate Expressions; for *verily* I cannot comprehend *thee*.

O! *says she*, She is my Mother; She is my Mother, and she does not own me.

Thy Mother! *says the QUAKER*, and began to be greatly mov'd indeed; I am astonish'd at thee; what dost thou mean?

I mean nothing but what I say, *says she*, I say again, She is my Mother! and will not own me; *and with that she stopp'd, with a Flood of Tears.*

Not own *thee!* *says the QUAKER*; and the tender, good Creature wept too; why, *she says*, she does not know *thee*, and never saw *thee* before.

No, *says the Girl*, I believe she does not know me, but I know her; and I know that she is my Mother.

It's impossible! Thou talk'st Mystery, *says the* QUAKER; wilt thou explain *thyself* a little to me?

Yes, yes, says she, I can explain it well enough; I am sure she is my Mother, and I have broke my Heart to search for her; and now to lose her again, when I was so sure I had found her, will break my Heart more effectually.

Well, but if she be *thy* Mother, *says the* QUAKER, how can it be that she should not know thee?

Alas! *says she*, I have been lost to her ever since I was a Child: She has never seen me.

And hast *thou* never seen her? *says the* QUAKER.

Yes, *says she*, I have seen her, often enough, I saw her, for when she was the Lady *Roxana* I was her House-Maid, *being a Servant*, but I did not know her then, nor she me, but it has all come out since; has she not a maid nam'd *Amy*? (*Note, the honest QUAKER was nonpuls'd, and greatly surpriz'd at that Question.*)

Truly, *says she*, the Lady — has several Women-Servants, but I do not know all their Names.

But her Woman, her Favourite, *adds the Girl*; is not her Name *Amy*?

Why, truly, *says the* QUAKER *with a very happy Turn of Wit*, I do not like to be examin'd; but lest *thou* should'st take up any Mistakes, by reason of my backwardness to speak, I will answer thee for once that what her Woman's Name is, I know not, but they call her *Cherry*.

N.B.—My Husband gave her that Name in jest, on our Wedding Day, and we had call'd her by it ever after, so that she spoke literally true at that time.

The girl reply'd very modestly, That she was sorry if she gave her any Offence in asking; that she did not design to be rude to her, or pretend to examine her; but that

she was in such an Agony at this Disaster, that she knew not what she did or said; and that she shou'd be very sorry to disoblige her; but begg'd of her again, as she was a Christian, and a Woman, and had been a Mother of Children, that she wou'd take Pity on her, and, *if possible* assist her, so that she might come to me, and speak a few Words to me.

The tender-hearted QUAKER told me, the Girl spoke this with such moving Eloquence, that it forc'd Tears from her, but she was oblig'd to say, That she neither knew where I was gone, or how to write to me; but that if she did ever see me again, she wou'd not fail to give me an Account of all she had said to her, or that she shou'd yet think fit to say; and to take my Answer to it, if I thought fit to give any.

Then the QUAKER took the Freedom to ask a few particulars about this wonderful Story, *as she call'd it*; at which, the Girl beginning at the first Distresses of my Life, *and indeed, of her own*, went thro' all the History of her miserable Education; her Service under the Lady *Roxana*, *as she call'd me*, and her Relief by Mrs. *Amy*; with the Reasons she had to believe, that as *Amy* own'd herself to be the same that liv'd with her Mother, *and especially*, that *Amy* was the Lady *Roxana's* Maid too, and came out of *France* with her, She was by those Circumstances, and several others in her Conversation, as fully convinc'd that the Lady *Roxana* was her Mother, as she was that the Lady —— at her house (*the Quaker's*) was the very same *Roxana* that she had been Servant to.

My good Friend the QUAKER, tho' terribly shock'd at the Story, and not well knowing what to say, yet was too much my Friend to seem convinc'd in a Thing which she did not know to be true, and which, if it was true, she

cou'd see plainly I had a-mind shou'd not be known; so she turn'd her Discourse to argue the Girl out of it: She insisted upon the slender Evidence she had of the Fact itself, and the Rudeness of claiming so near a Relation of one so much above her, and of whose Concern in it she had no Knowledge, *at least* not sufficient Proof; that as the Lady at her House was a Person above any Disguises, so she cou'd not believe that she wou'd deny her being her Daughter if she was really her Mother; that she was able sufficiently to have provided for her, if she had not a-mind to have her known; and therefore, seeing she had heard all she had said of the Lady *Roxana*, and was so far from owning herself to be the Person, so she had censur'd that Sham-Lady as a Cheat and a common Woman; and that 'twas certain she cou'd never be brought to own a Name and Character she had so justly expos'd.

Besides, *she told her*, that her Lodger *meaning me*, was not a Sham-Lady, but the real Wife of a Knight Baronet; and that she knew her to be honestly such, and far above such a Person as she had describ'd; *She then added*, that she had another Reason why it was not very possible to be true; *and that is, says she*, *Thy Age* is in the way; for thou acknowledgest, that *thou* art four-and-twenty Years old, and that *thou* wast the Youngest of three of *thy* Mother's Children; so that, by *thy* Account *thy* Mother must be extremely young, or this Lady cannot be *thy* Mother; for *thou* seest, *says she*, and any one may see, she is but a young Woman now, and can't be suppos'd to be above Forty Years old, if she is so much, and is now big with Child at her going into the Country; so that I cannot give any Credit to *thy* Notion of her being *thy* Mother; and if I might counsel *thee*, it shou'd be to give-over that Thought as an improbable Story that does but

serve to disorder *thee*, and disturb *thy* Head; for, *added she*, I perceive thou art much disturb'd indeed.

But this was all nothing: She cou'd be satisfy'd with nothing but seeing me; but the QUAKER defended herself very well, and insisted on it that she cou'd not give her any Account of me; and finding her still importunate, she affected at last, being a little disgusted that she shou'd not believe her, *and added*, That indeed, if she had known where I was gone, she wou'd not have given any one an Account of it, unless I had given her Orders to do so; but seeing she has not acquainted me, *says she*, where she is gone, 'tis an intimation to me, she was not desirous it shou'd be publicly known; and with this she rose up, which was as plain a desiring her to rise up too, and be gone, as cou'd be express'd, except the downright showing her the Door.

Well, the Girl rejected all this, *and told her*, She cou'd not indeed expect that she (the QUAKER) shou'd be affected with the Story she had told her, however moving; or that she should take any Pity on her: That it was her Misfortune, that when she was at the House before, and in the Room with me, she did not beg to speak a Word with me in private, or throw herself upon the Floor, at my Feet, and claim what the Affection of a Mother wou'd have done for her; but since she had slipp'd her Opportunity, she wou'd wait for another; that she found by her (*the Quaker's*) Talk, that she had not quite left her Lodgings, but was gone into the Country, *she supposed*, for the Air; and she was resolv'd she would take so much *Knight-Errantry* upon her, that she wou'd visit all the Airing-Places in the Nation, and even all the Kingdom over, ay, and *Holland* too, but she wou'd find me; for she was satisfy'd she could so convince me that she was my

own Child, that I wou'd not deny it; and she was sure I was so tender and compassionate, I wou'd not let her perish after I was convinc'd that she was my own Flesh and Blood; and in saying she wou'd visit all the Airing-Places in *England*, she reckon'd them all up by Name, and began with *Tunbridge*, the very Place I was gone to; then reckoning up *Epsom*, *North-Hall*, *Barnet*, *Newmarket*, *Bury*, and at last, the *Bath*. And with this she took her Leave.

My faithful Agent the QUAKER fail'd not to write to me immediately, but as she was a cunning, as well as an honest Woman, it presently occur'd to her that this was a Story which, whether True or False, was not very fit to come to my Husband's Knowledge; that as she did not know what I might have been, or might have been called in former Times, and how far there might have been *something or nothing* in it, so she thought if it was a Secret, I ought to have the telling of it myself; and if it was not, it might as well, be publick afterwards, as now; and that, at least, she ought to leave it where she found it, and not hand it forwards to any-body without my Consent: These prudent Measures were inexpressibly kind, as well as seasonable, for it had been likely enough that her Letter might have come publickly to me, and tho' my husband wou'd not have open'd it, yet it wou'd have look'd a little odd that I shou'd conceal its contents from him, when I had pretended so much to communicate all my Affairs.

In Consequence of this wise Caution, my good Friend only wrote me in a few Words, That the impertinent Young-Woman had been with her, as she expected she wou'd, and that she thought it wou'd be very convenient that, if I cou'd spare *Cherry*, I wou'd send her up (meaning *Amy*), because she found there might be some Occasion for her.

As it happen'd, this letter was enclos'd to *Amy* herself, and not sent by the Way I had at first order'd; but it came safe to my Hands; and tho' I was allarm'd a little at it, yet I was not acquainted with the Danger I was in of an immediate Visit from this teizing Creature, till afterwards; and I ran a greater Risque indeed, than ordinary, in that I did not send *Amy* up under thirteen or fourteen Days, believing myself as much conceal'd at *Tunbridge* as if I had been at *Vienna*.

But the Concern my faithful SPY (*for such my QUAKER was now, upon the meer foot of her own Sagacity*)—I say, her Concern for me, was my Safety in this Exigence, when I was, *as it were*, keeping no Guard for myself; for finding *Amy* not come up, and that she did not know how soon this wild Thing might put her design'd Ramble in Practice, she sent a Messenger to the Captain's Wife's House, where she lodg'd, to tell her that she wanted to speak with her. She was at the Heels of the Messenger, and came eager for some News, and hop'd, *she said*, the Lady (*meaning me*) had been come to Town.

The QUAKER, with as much Caution as she was Mistress of, *not to tell a downright Lye*, made her believe she expected to hear of me very quickly; and frequently, *by the by*, speaking of being Abroad to take the Air, talk'd of the country about *Bury*, how pleasant it was; how wholesome; and how fine an Air: How the *Downs* about *Newmarket* were exceeding fine; and what a vast deal of Company there was, now the *Court* was there; till at last, the Girl began to conclude that *my Ladyship* was gone thither; for, *she said*, She knew I lov'd to see a great-deal of Company.

Nay, *says my friend*, *thou* tak'st me wrong; I did not suggest, *says she*, that the Person *thou* enquir'st after, is

gone thither, neither do I believe she is, *I assure thee*: Well, the Girl smil'd, and let her know that she believ'd it for all that; so, to clinch it fast, 'Verily, *says she, with great Seriousness*, Thou do'st not do well, for *thou* suspectest every-thing and believest nothing: I speak solemnly to *thee*, that I do not believe they are gone that *Way*; so if thou giv'st *thyself* the Trouble to go that *Way*, and art disappointed, do not say that I have deceiv'd thee. She knew well enough, that if this did abate her Suspicion, it wou'd not remove it, and that it wou'd do little more than amuse her; but by this she kept her in suspense till *Amy* came up, and that was enough.

When *Amy* came up she was quite confounded, to hear the Relation which the QUAKER gave her, and found means to acquaint me of it; only letting me know, to my great Satisfaction, that she wou'd not come to *Tunbridge* first, but that she would certainly go to *Newmarket* or *Bury* first.

However, it gave me very great Uneasiness, for as she resolv'd to ramble in search after me, over the whole Country, I was safe no-where, no, not in *Holland* itself; so indeed, I did not know what to do with her: And thus I had a *Bitter* in all my *Sweet*, for I was continually perplex'd with this Hussy and thought she haunted me like an *Evil Spirit*.

In the meantime *Amy* was next-door to stark-mad about her; she durst not see her at my Lodgings, for her Life, and she went Days without Number to *Spittle-Fields*, where she us'd to come, and to her former Lodging, and cou'd never meet with her; at length she took up a mad Resolution, that she would go directly to the Captain's House in *Redriff*, and speak with her; it was a mad Step, *that's true*, but, *as Amy said*, she was mad, so

nothing she cou'd do cou'd be otherwise: For if *Amy* had found her at *Redriff*, she (*the Girl*) wou'd have concluded presently, that the *QUAKER* had given her Notice, and so that we were all of a Knot, and that, *in short*, all she had said was right: But as it happen'd, things came to hit better than we expected; for that *Amy*, going out of a Coach, to take Water at *Tower-Wharf*, meets *the Girl* just come on-Shoar, having cross'd the Water from *Redriff*: *Amy* made as if she wou'd have pass'd by her, tho' they met so full that she did not pretend she did not see her, for she look'd fairly upon her first; but then, turning her Head away, with a Slight, offer'd to go from her; but the *Girl* stopp'd and spoke first, and made some Manners to her.

Amy spoke coldly to her, and a little angry; and after some Words, standing in the Street, or Passage, *the Girl* saying, she seem'd to be angry, and would not have spoken to her: *Why*, says *Amy*, *How can you expect I shou'd have any more to say to you, after I had done so much for you, and you have behav'd so to me?* The *Girl* seem'd to take no Notice of that now, but answer'd, *I was going to wait on you now*: Wait on me! says *Amy*; what do you mean by that? *Why*, says she again, *with a kind of Familiarity*, I was going to your Lodgings.

Amy was provok'd to the last degree at her, and yet she thought it was not her time to resent, because she had a more fatal and wicked Design in her Head, against her; which indeed I never knew till after it was executed, nor durst *Amy* ever communicate it to me, for as I had always express'd myself vehemently against hurting a Hair of her Head, so she was resolv'd to take her own Measures, without consulting me any more.

In order to this, *Amy* gave her good Words, and conceal'd her Resentment as much as she cou'd; and when

she talk'd of going to her Lodging, *Amy* smil'd and said nothing, but called for a Pair of Oars to go to *Greenwich*; and ask'd her, seeing *she said* she was going to her Lodging, to go along with her, for she was going Home, and was all alone.

Amy did this with such a Stock of Assurance, that the Girl was confounded and knew not what to say; but the more she hesitated, the more *Amy* press'd her to go, and, talking very kindly to her, *told her* If she did not go to see her Lodgings, she might go to keep her Company, and she wou'd pay a Boat to bring her back-again; so, *in a word*, *Amy*, prevail'd on her to go into the Boat with her, and carried her down to *Greenwich*.

'Tis certain, that *Amy* had no more Business at *Greenwich* than I had; nor was she going thither; but we were all hamper'd to the last Degree, with the Impertinence of this Creature; and in particular, I was horribly perplex'd with it.

As they were in the Boat, *Amy* began to reproach her with Ingratitude, in treating her so rudely, who had done so much for her, and been so kind to her, and to ask her what she had got by it? or what she expected to get? Then came in my Share, the Lady *Roxana*; *Amy* jested with that; and banter'd her a little, *and ask'd her*, if she had found her yet?

But *Amy* was both surpriz'd and enrag'd when the Girl told her roundly, That she thank'd her for what she had done for her; but that she wou'd not have her think she was so ignorant, as not to know that what she (*Amy*) had done, was by her Mother's Order; and who she was beholden to for it: That she could never make Instruments pass for Principals, and pay the Debt to the Agent, when the Obligation was all to the Original: That she

knew well enough who she was, and who she was employ'd by: That she knew the Lady —— very well (*naming the Name that I now went by*), which was my Husband's true Name, and by which she might know whether she had found out her Mother or no.

Amy wish'd her at the Bottom of the *Thames*; and had there been no Watermen in the Boat, and no-body in sight, *she swore to me*, she wou'd have thrown her into the River. I was horribly disturb'd when she told me this story, and began to think this wou'd, at last, all end in my Ruin; but when *Amy* spoke of throwing her into the River and drowning her, I was so provok'd at her, that all my Rage turn'd against *Amy* and I fell thorowly out with her: I had now kept *Amy* almost thirty Years, and found her, on all Occasions the faithfulest Creature to me that ever woman had; *I say*, faithful to me; for however wicked she was, still she was true to me; and even this Rage of hers was all upon my Account, and for fear any Mischief shou'd befall me.

But be that how it wou'd, I cou'd not bear the Mention of her Murthering the poor Girl, and it put me so beside myself, that I rose up in a Rage, and bade her get out of my Sight, and out of my House; *told her*, I had kept her too long, and that I wou'd never see her Face more: I had before told her, That she was a Murtherer and a bloody-minded Creature; that she cou'd not but know that I cou'd not bear the Thought of it, much less the Mention of it; and that it was the impudentest Thing that ever was known, to make such a Proposal to me, when she knew that I was really the Mother of this Girl, and that she was my own Child; that it was wicked enough in her; but that she must conclude I was ten times wickeder than herself, if I cou'd come into it: That

the Girl was in the right, and I had nothing to blame her for; but that it was owing to the Wickedness of my Life, that made it necessary for me to keep her from a Discovery; but that I would not murther my child, tho' I was otherwise to be ruin'd by it: *Amy* reply'd somewhat rough and short, Would I not, but she wou'd, *she said*, if she had an Opportunity: And upon these Words it was that I bade her get out of my Sight and out of my House; and it went so far, that *Amy* pack'd up her Alls, and march'd off, and was gone for almost good-and-all: *But of that in its Order; I must go back to her Relation of the Voyage which they made to Greenwich together.*

They held on the Wrangle all-the-way by Water; the Girl insisted upon her knowing that I was her Mother, and told her all the History of my Life in the *Pallmall*, as well after her being turn'd away, as before; and of my Marriage since; and which was worse, not only who my present Husband was, but where he had liv'd, *viz.* at *Roan* in *France*; she knew nothing of *Paris* or of where we was going to live, *namely*, at *Nimeugen*; but told her in so many Words, That if she cou'd not find me here, she would go to *Holland* after me.

The landed at *Greenwich*, and *Amy* carried her into the Park with her, and they walk'd above two hours there, in the farthest and remotest Walks; which *Amy* did because as they talk'd with great heat, it was apparent they were quarrelling, and the People took Notice of it.

They walk'd till they came almost to the Wilderness, at the *South* side of the Park, but *the Girl*, perceiving *Amy* offer'd to go in there, among the Woods, and Trees, stopp'd short there, and wou'd go no farther; *but said*, she wou'd not go in there.

Amy smil'd, and ask'd her what was the Matter? *She*

replied short, She did not know where she was, nor, where she was going to carry her, and she wou'd go no further; and without any more Ceremony, turns back, and walks apace away from her: *Amy* own'd she was surpriz'd, and came back too, and call'd to her; upon which the Girl stopt, and *Amy* coming up to her, ask'd her, what she meant.

The Girl boldly replied, She did not know but she might murther her, and that, *in short*, She would not trust herself with her; and never wou'd come into her Company again, alone.

It was very provoking; but, however, *Amy* kept her Temper, with much Difficulty, and bore it, knowing that much might depend upon it; so she mock'd her foolish Jealousie, *and told her*, She need not be uneasie for her, she wou'd do her no Harm, and wou'd have done her Good, if she wou'd have let her; but since she was of such a refractory Humour, she should not trouble herself, for she shou'd never come into her company again; and that neither she, or her Brother, or Sister, shou'd ever hear from her, or see her any-more; and so she shou'd have the Satisfaction of being the Ruin of her Brother and Sister, as well as of herself.

The Girl seem'd a little mollified at that, *and said*, That for herself, she knew the worst of it, she cou'd seek her Fortune, but 'twas hard her Brother and Sister shou'd suffer on her Score; and said something that was tender, and well enough on that Account: *But Amy told her*, it was for her to take that into Consideration, for she would let her see that it was all her own; that she wou'd have done them all Good, but that having been us'd thus, she wou'd do no more for any of them; and that she shou'd not need to be afraid to come into her Company

again, for she wou'd never give her Occasion for it any more; *by the way*, was false in *the Girl* too, for she did venture into *Amy's* Company again after that, once too much; *as I shall relate by itself*.

They grew cooler, however, afterwards, and *Amy* carry'd her into a House at *Greenwich* where she was acquainted, and took an Occasion to leave *the Girl* in a Room a-while, to speak to the People in the House, and so prepare them to own her as a Lodger in the House; and then going in to her again, *told her*, There she lodg'd if she had a-mind to find her out; or if any-body else had any-thing to say to her; and so *Amy* dismiss'd her, and got rid of her again; and finding an empty Hackney-Coach in the Town, came away by Land to *London*, and the *Girl* going down to the Water-side, came by Boat.

This Conversation did not answer *Amy's* End at-all, because it did not secure the *Girl* from pursuing her Design of hunting me out; and tho' my indefatigable Friend the *QUAKER* amus'd her three or four Days, yet I had such Notice of it at last, that I thought fit to come away from *Tunbridge* upon it, and where to go I knew not; but, *in short*, I went to a little village upon *Epping-Forest*, call'd *Woodford*, and took Lodgings in a Private House, where I liv'd retir'd about six Weeks, till I thought she might be tir'd of her Search, and have given me over.

Here I receiv'd an Account from my trusty *QUAKER* that the *Wench* had really been at *Tunbridge*; had found out my Lodgings; and had told her Tale there in a most dismal Tone; that she had follow'd us as she thought, to *London*, but the *QUAKER* had answer'd her, That she knew nothing of it, which was indeed true; and had admonish'd her to be easie and not hunt after People of

such Fashion as we were, as if we were Thieves; that she might be assur'd that since I was not willing to see her, I wou'd not be forc'd to it; and treating me thus wou'd effectually disoblige me: And with such Discourses as these she quieted her; and *she* (*the* QUAKER) added that she hop'd I shou'd not be troubl'd much more with her.

It was in this time that *Amy* gave me the History of her *Greenwich* Voyage, when she spoke of drowning and killing the Girl, in so serious a manner, and with such an apparent Resolution of doing it, that, *as I said*, put me in a Rage with her, so that I effectually turn'd her away from me, *as I have said above*; and she was gone, nor did she so much as tell me whither, or which Way she was gone; on the other-hand, when I came to reflect on it, that now I had neither Assistant nor Confident to speak to, or receivethelast Information from, *my Friend* the QUAKER *excepted*, it made me very uneasie.

I waited, and expected, and wonder'd from Day to Day, still thinking *Amy* wou'd one time or other, think a little, and come again, or *at least*, let me hear of her; but for ten Days together I heard nothing of her; I was so impatient, that I got neither Rest by Day, or Sleep by Night, and what to do I knew not; I durst not go to Town to the QUAKER's, for fear of meeting that vexatious Creature, *my Girl*, and I cou'd get no Intelligence, where I was; so I got my Spouse, upon Pretence of wanting her Company, to take the Coach one Day, and fetch my good QUAKER to me.

When I had her, I durst ask her no Questions, nor hardly knew which End of the Business to begin to talk of; but of her own accord *she told me*, that the Girl had been three or four times haunting her, for News from me; and that she had been so troublesome, that she had

been oblig'd to show herself a little angry with her, and *at last, told her plainly*, that she need give herself no Trouble in searching after me, by her means; for she (*the QUAKER*) wou'd not tell her, if she knew; upon which she refrain'd a-while: But on the other-hand, *she told me*, it was not safe for me to send my own Coach for her to come in; for she had some Reason to believe, that *she (my Daughter)* watch'd her Door Night and Day, *nay*, and watch'd her too every time she went in and out; for she was so bent upon a Discovery that she spar'd no Pains; and she believ'd she had taken a Lodging very near their House, for that Purpose.

I cou'd hardly give her a Hearing of all this, for my Eagerness to ask for *Amy*, but I was confounded when she told me she had heard nothing of her; 'tis impossible to express the anxious Thoughts that roll'd about in my Mind, and continually perplex'd me about her; particularly, I reproach'd myself with my Rashness, in turning away so faithful a Creature, that for so many Years had not only been a Servant, but an Agent, and not only an Agent, but a Friend, and a Faithful Friend too.

Then I consider'd too, that *Amy* knew all the Secret History of my Life, had been in all the Intrigues of it, and been a Party in both Evil and Good, and at best, there was no Policy in it; that *as* it was very ungenerous and unkind, to run Things to such an Extremity with her, and for an Occasion too, in which all the Fault she was guilty of, was owing to her Excess of Care for my Safety; *so* it must be only her steady Kindness to me, and an excess of Generous Friendship for me, that should keep her from ill-using me in return for it; which ill-using me was enough in her power, and might be my utter Undoing.

These Thoughts perplex'd me exceedingly; and what Course to take, I really did not know; I began indeed, to give *Amy* quite over, for she had now been gone above a Fortnight; and as she had taken away all her Cloaths and her Money too, *which was not a little*, and so had no Occasion of that kind, to come any-more, so she had not left any word where she was gone, or to which Part of the World I might send to hear of her.

And I was troubl'd on another account too, *viz.* that my Spouse and I too had resolv'd to do very handsomely for *Amy*, without considering what she might have got another way at-all; but we had said nothing of it to her; and so I thought, as she had not known what was likely to fall in her way, she had not the Influence of that Expectation to make her come back.

Upon the whole, the Perplexity of this Girl who hunt-ed me, as if, *like a Hound*, she had had a hot Scent, but was now at a Fault; *I say*, that Perplexity, and this other Part, of *Amy* being gone, issued in this, I resolv'd to be gone, and go over to *Holland*; there I believ'd I shou'd be at rest: So I took Occasion one-Day to tell my Spouse, that I was afraid he might take it ill that I had amus'd him thus long, and that, *at last*, I doubted I was not with-Child, and that since it was so, our Things being pack'd up, and all in order for going to *Holland*, I wou'd go away now, when he pleas'd.

My Spouse, who was perfectly easie whether in going or staying, left it all entirely to me; so I consider'd of it, and began to prepare again for my Voyage; but, alas! I was irresolute to the last Degree; I was, for want of *Amy*, destitute; I had lost my Right-Hand; she was my Steward, gather'd in my Rents, *I mean my Interest-Money*, and kept my Accounts, and, *in a word*, did all my

Business; and without her, *indeed*, I knew not how to go away, nor how to stay: But an Accident thrust itself in here, and that even in *Amy's* Conduct too, which frightened me away, and without her too, in the utmost Horror and Confusion.

I have related how my faithful Friend the QUAKER, was come to me, and what Account she gave me of her being continually haunted by my Daughter; and that, *as she said*, she watch'd her very Door, Night and Day; *the Truth was*, she had set a SPY to watch so effectually, that she (*the QUAKER*) neither went in nor out but she had Notice of it.

This was too evident when, the next Morning after she came to me, (*for I kept her all-Night*), to my unspeakable Surprize, I saw a Hackney-Coach stop at the Door where I lodg'd, and saw her (*my Daughter*) in the Coach all-alone: It was a very good Chance in the middle of a bad one, that my Husband had taken out the Coach that very Morning and was gone to *London*; as for me, I had neither Life nor Soul left in me; I was so confounded, I knew not what to do, or to say.

My *happy Visitor* had more presence of Mind than I; and ask'd me, If I made no Acquaintance among the Neighbours? *I told her*, Yes, there was a Lady lodg'd two Doors off, that I was very intimate with; but hast *thou* no Way out backward to go to her? *says she*. Now it happen'd there was a Back-Door in the Garden, by which we usually went and came to and from the House; so I told her of it: *Well, well*, says she, *Go out and make a Visit then, and leave the rest to me*. Away I run; told the Lady (for I was very free there) that I was a Widow to-Day; my Spouse being gone to *London*, so I came not to visit her, but to dwell with her that Day, because also, our Land-

lady had got Strangers come from *London*: So having fram'd this orderly Lye, I pull'd some work out of my Pocket, *and added*, I did not come to be Idle.

As I went out one-way, my Friend the QUAKER went the other, to receive this unwelcome Guest: The Girl made but little Ceremony; but, having bid the Coachman ring at the Gate, gets down, out of the Coach, and comes to the Door; a Country-Girl going to the Door (belonging to the House), for the QUAKER forbade any of my Maids going: *Madam* asked for my QUAKER by Name; and the Girl ask'd her to walk in.

Upon this, my QUAKER, seeing there was no hanging back, goes to her immediately, but put on all the Gravity upon her Countenance, that she was Mistress of; and that was not a little indeed.

When she (the QUAKER) came into the Room (*for they had show'd my Daughter into a little Parlour*), she kept her grave Countenance, but said not a Word; nor did *my Daughter* speak a good while; but after some time, *my Girl* began, *and said*, I suppose you know me, madam?

Yes, *says the* QUAKER, I know *thee*; and so the Dialogue went on.

Girl. Then you know my Business too.

Quaker. No, verily, I do not know any Business *thou* can'st have here with me.

Girl. Indeed, my Business is not chiefly with you.

Quaker. Why then do'st *thou* come after me thus far?

Girl. You know who I seek. (*And with that she cry'd*).

Quaker. But why should'st *thou* follow me for her, since *thou* know'st, that I assur'd thee more than once, that I knew not where she was?

Girl. But I hop'd you cou'd.

Quaker. Then *thou* must hope that I did not speak Truth; which wou'd be very wicked.

Girl. I doubt not but *she* is in this House.

Quaker. If those be *thy* thoughts, *thou* may'st enquire in the House; so thou hast no more Business with me; Farewell. (*Offers to go.*)

Girl. I wou'd not be uncivil; I beg you to let me see her.

Quaker. I am here to visit some of my Friends, and I think *thou* art not very civil in following me hither.

Girl. I came in hopes of a Discovery in my great Affair, which you know of.

Quaker. *Thou* cam'st wildly indeed; I counsel *thee* to go back again, and be easie. I shall keep my Word with *thee* that I wou'd not meddle in it or give *thee* any Account, if I knew it, unless I had her Orders.

Girl. If you knew my Distress, you cou'd not be so cruel.

Quaker. *Thou* hast told me all *thy* Story, and I think it might be more Cruelty to tell *thee*, than not to tell *thee*; for I understand *she* is resolv'd not to see *thee*, and declares *she* is not *thy* Mother. Will'st *thou* be own'd where *thou* hast no Relation?

Girl. O! if I cou'd but speak to her, I wou'd prove my Relation to her, so that she cou'd not deny it any longer.

Quaker. Well, but *thou* can'st not come to speak with her, it seems.

Girl. I hope you will tell me if *she* is here; I had a good Account that you were come out to see her, and that *she* sent for you.

Quaker. I much wonder how *thou* could'st have such an Account; if I had come out to see her, *thou* hast hap-

pen'd to miss the House, for I assure *thee* *she* is not to be found in this House.

Here the Girl importun'd her again, with the utmost Earnestness, and cry'd bitterly; insomuch that my poor QUAKER was soften'd with it, and began to perswade me to consider of it, and if it might consist with my Affairs, to see her and hear what she had to say; but this was afterwards: *I return to the Discourse.*

The QUAKER was perplex'd with her a long time; she talk'd of sending back the Coach and lying in the Town all-Night: This my Friend knew wou'd be very uneasie to me, but she durst not speak a Word against it; but on a sudden Thought, she offer'd a bold Stroke, which, tho' dangerous if it had happen'd wrong, had its desir'd Effect.

She told her, That as for dismissing her Coach, that was as she pleas'd; she believ'd she would not easily get a Lodging in the Town; but that as she was in a strange place, she wou'd so much befriend her that she wou'd speak to the People of the House, that if they had room, she might have a Lodging there for one Night, rather than be forc'd back to *London*, before she was free to go.

This was a cunning, tho' a dangerous Step, and it succeeded accordingly, for it amus'd the Creature entirely, and she presently concluded, that really I cou'd not be there then; otherwise she wou'd never have ask'd her to lie in the House. So she grew cold again presently, as to her lodging there; *and said*, No, since it was so, She wou'd go back that Afternoon, but she would come again in two or three Days, and search that, and all the Towns round, in an effectual Manner, if she stay'd a Week or Two to do it; for, *in short*, if I was in *England* or *Holland*, she wou'd find me.

In Truth, *says the QUAKER*, thou wilt make me very hurtful to *thee*, then: Why so, *says she*? Because wherever I go, *thou* wilt put thyself to great Expence, and the Country to a great-deal of unnecessary Trouble: Not unnecessary, *says she*: Yes truly, *says the QUAKER*, it must be unnecessary, because 'twill be to no Purpose. I think I must abide in my own House, to save *thee* that Charge and Trouble.

She said little to that, except that, *she said*, she wou'd give her as little trouble as possible; but she was afraid she shou'd sometimes be uneasie to her, which she hop'd she would excuse. My QUAKER *told her*, She would much rather excuse her, if she wou'd forbear; for that, if she wou'd believe her, she wou'd assure her, she shou'd never get any Intelligence of me, by her.

That set her into Tears again; but after a-while recovering herself, *she told her*, Perhaps she might be mistaken; and she (*the QUAKER*) shou'd watch herself, very narrowly; or she might one time or other get some Intelligence from her, whether she would or no; and she was satisfy'd she had gain'd some of her by this Journey; for that if I was not in the House, I was not far off; and if I did not remove very quickly, she wou'd find me out: Very well, *says my QUAKER*, then if the Lady is not willing to see *thee*, *thou* giv'st me Notice to tell her that she may get out of *thy* Way.

She flew out in a Rage at that, *and told my Friend* that if she did, a Curse wou'd follow her, and her Children after her; and denounc'd such horrid things upon her, as frighted the poor tender-hearted QUAKER strangely, and put her more out of Temper, than ever I saw her before; so that she resolv'd to go home the next Morning; and I, that was ten times more uneasie than she, resolv'd

to follow her, and go to *London* too; which however, upon second Thoughts, I did not, but took effectual Measures not to be seen or own'd if she came any-more; but I heard no more of her for some time.

I stay'd there about a Fortnight, and in all that time I heard no more of her, or of my QUAKER about her. But after about two days more I had a Letter from my QUAKER, intimating that she had something of moment to say, that she cou'd not communicate by a Letter, but wish'd I wou'd give myself the trouble to come up; directing me to come with the coach into *Goodman's-Fields*, and then walk to her Back-Door on-foot, which being left open on purpose, the watchful Lady, if she had any Spies, could not well see me.

My Thoughts had for so long time been kept, as it were, waking, that almost every-thing gave me the Allarm, and this especially, so that I was very uneasie; but I cou'd not bring matters to bear to make my coming to *London* so clear to my Husband as I wou'd have done, for he lik'd the Place and had a-mind, *he said*, to stay a little longer, if it was not against my Inclination; So I wrote my Friend the QUAKER, Word, That *I cou'd not come to Town yet*, and that besides, I cou'd not think of being there under Spies, and afraid to look out-of-Doors; and so, *in short*, I put off going for near a Fortnight more.

At the end of that Time she wrote again, *in which she told me*, That she had not lately seen the *Impertinent Visitor*, which had been so troublesome; but that she had seen my *Trusty Agent*, *Amy*, who told her, she had cry'd for six Weeks, without Intermission; that *Amy* had given her an Account how troublesome the Creature had been; and to what Straits and Perplexities I was driven, by her hunting after, and following me from Place to Place:

Upon which, *Amy* had said, That notwithstanding I was angry with her, and had us'd her so hardly, for saying something about her of the same kind; yet there was an absolute Necessity of securing her, and removing her out-of-the-way; and that, *in short*, without asking my Leave, or any-body's Leave, she wou'd take Care she shou'd trouble her Mistress (*meaning me*) no more; and that after *Amy* had said so, she had indeed never heard any more of the Girl; so that she suppos'd *Amy* had manag'd it so well, as to put an End to it.

The innocent well-meaning Creature, my QUAKER, who was all Kindness, and Goodness, in herself, *and particularly to me*, saw nothing in this, but she thought *Amy* had found some Way to perswade her to be quiet and easie and to give over teizing and following me, and rejoic'd in it, for my sake; as she thought nothing of any Evil herself, so she suspected none in any-body else, and was exceeding glad of having such good News to write to me: But my Thoughts of it ran otherwise.

I was struck as with a Blast from Heaven, at the reading her Letter; I fell into a Fit of trembling, from Head to Foot, and I ran raving about the Room like a Mad-Woman; I had nobody to speak a Word to, to give Vent to my Passion; nor did I speak a Word for a good-while, till after it had almost overcome me; I threw myself on the Bed, and cry'd out, *Lord be merciful to me, she has murdered my Child*; and with that a Flood of Tears burst out, and I cry'd vehemently for above an Hour.

My Husband was very happily gone out a-hunting, so that I had every Opportunity of being alone, and to give my Passions some Vent, by which I a little recover'd myself: But after my Crying was over, then I fell in a new Rage at *Amy*; I call'd her a thousand Devils, and Mon-

sters, and hard-hearted Tyger's; I reproach'd her with her knowing that I abhorr'd it, and had let her know it sufficiently, in that I had, *as it were*, kick'd her out of Doors, after so many Years' Friendship and Service, only for naming it to me.

Well, after some time my Spouse came in from his Sport, and I put on the best Looks I cou'd to deceive him; but he did not take so little Notice of me, as not to see I had been crying, and that something troubled me, as he press'd me to tell him; I seem'd to bring it out with Reluctance, *but told him*, My Backwardness was, more because I was asham'd that such a Trifle shou'd have any Effect upon me, than for any Weight that was in it: So *I told him*, I had been vexing myself about my Woman *Amy's* not coming again; that she might have known me better, than not to believe I shou'd have been Friends with her again, *and the like*; and that, *in short*, I had lost the best Servant by my Rashness, that ever Woman had.

Well, well, *says he*, if that be all your Grief, I hope you will soon shake it off; I'll warrant you, in a little-while we shall hear of Mrs. *Amy* again; and so it went off for that time: But it did not go off with me; for I was uneasie and terrified to the last Degree, and wanted to get some further Account of the thing: So I went away to my sure and certain Comforter the QUAKER, and there I had the whole Story of it; and the good innocent QUAKER gave me joy of my being rid of such an unsufferable Tormentor.

Rid of her! Ay, *says I*, if I was rid of her fairly and honourably; but I don't know what *Amy* may have done; sure she hasn't made her away: O fie! *says my QUAKER*, how can'st *thou* entertain such a Notion? *No, no*, made her away! *Amy* didn't talk like that; I dare say, *thou* may'st

be easy in that, *Amy* has nothing of that in her Head, I dare say, *says she*; and so threw it, *as it were*, out of my Thoughts.

But it wou'd not do; it ran in my Head continually, Night and Day I cou'd think of nothing else; and it fix'd such a Horrour of the Fact upon my Spirits, and such a Detestation of *Amy*, who I look'd upon as the Murtherer, that, *as for her*, I believe, if I cou'd have seen her, I shou'd certainly have sent her to *Newgate*, or to a worse Place, upon Suspicion; *indeed*, I think I cou'd have kill'd her with my own Hands.

As for the poor Girl herself, she was ever before my Eyes; I saw her by-Night and by-Day; she haunted my Imagination, if she did not haunt the House; my Fancy show'd her me in a hundred Shapes and Postures; sleeping or waking, she was with me: Sometimes I thought I saw her with her Throat cut; sometimes with her Head cut, and her Brains knock'd-out; other-times hang'd up upon a Beam; another time drown'd in the Great Pond at *Camberwell*: And all these Appearances were terrifying to the last Degree; and that which was still worse, I cou'd really hear nothing of her: I sent to the Captain's Wife in *Redriff*, and she answer'd me, She was gone to her Relations in *Spittle-Fields*, I sent thither, and they said, she was there about three Weeks ago; but that she went out in a Coach with the Gentlewoman that us'd to be so kind to her, but whither she was gone, they knew not; for she had not been there since. I sent back the Messenger for a Description of the Woman she went out with, and they describ'd her so perfectly, that I knew it to be *Amy*, and none but *Amy*.

I sent word again, that Mrs. *Amy*, who she went out with, left her in two or three Hours, and that they shou'd

search for her, for I had reason to fear she was murdered: This frightened them all intollerably; they believ'd *Amy* had carry'd her to pay her a Sum of Money, and that somebody had watch'd her after her having receiv'd it, and had Robb'd and Murthered her.

I believ'd nothing of that Part; but I believ'd as it was, that Whatever was done, *Amy* had done it; and that, *in short*, *Amy* had made her away; and I believ'd it the more because *Amy* came no more near me, but confirm'd her Guilt by her Absence.

Upon the whole, I mourn'd thus for her, for above a *Month*; but finding *Amy* still come not near me, and that I must put my Affairs in a Posture that I might go to *Holland*, I open'd all my Affairs to my dear trusty Friend the QUAKER, and plac'd her, in Matters of Trust, in the room of *Amy*, and with a heavy, bleeding Heart for my poor Girl, I embark'd with my Spouse, and all our Equipage and Goods, on-board another *Holland's-Trader*, not a Packet-Boat, and went over to *Holland*; where I arriv'd as I have said.

I must put in a Caution however, here, that you must not understand me as if I let my Friend the QUAKER into any Part of the Secret History of my former Life; nor did I commit the Grand reserv'd Article of all, to her, *viz.* That I was really the Girl's Mother, and the Lady *Roxana*; there was no need of that Part being expos'd; and it was always a Maxim with me, *That Secrets shou'd never be open'd, without evident Utility*: It cou'd be of no manner of Use to me, or her, to communicate that Part to her; besides, she was too honest herself, to make it safe to me; for tho' she lov'd me very sincerely, and it was plain, by many Circumstances, that she did so, yet she would not Lye for me upon Occasion, as *Amy* wou'd,

and therefore it was not advisable on any Terms to communicate that Part; for if the Girl, or any one else, shou'd have come to her afterwards, and put it home to her, Whether she knew that I was the Girl's Mother or not; or was the same as the Lady *Roxana*, or not, she either wou'd not have denied it, or wou'd have done it with so ill a Grace, such Blushing, such Hesitations, and Faultings in her Answers, as wou'd have put the Matter out of doubt, and betray'd herself and the Secret too.

For this Reason, *I say*, I did not discover anything of that kind to her; but I plac'd her, *as I have said*, in *Amy's* stead, in the other Affairs of receiving Money, Interests, Rents, *and the like*, and she was as faithful as *Amy* cou'd be, and as diligent.

But there fell out a great Difficulty here, which I knew not how to get over; and this was, how to convey the usual Supply, or Provision and Money to the Uncle and the other Sister, who depended, especially the Sister, upon the said Supply, for her Support; and indeed, tho' *Amy* had said rashly, that she wou'd not take any more Notice of the Sister, and wou'd leave her to perish, *as above*, yet it was neither in my Nature, nor *Amy's* either, much less was it in my Design, and therefore I resolv'd to leave the Management of what I had reserv'd for that Work with my faithful QUAKER, but how to direct her to manage them, was the great Difficulty.

Amy had told them in so many Words, That she was not their Mother, but that she was the Maid *Amy* that carried them to their Aunt's; that she and their Mother went over to the *East-Indies* to seek their Fortune, and that there good Things had befallen them; and that their Mother was very rich and happy; that she (*Amy*) had married in the *Indies*, but being now a Widow, and re-

solving to come over to *England*, their Mother had oblig'd her to enquire them out, and do for them as she had done; and that now she was resolv'd to go back to the *Indies* again; but that she had Orders from their *Mother* to do very handsomely by them; and, *in a word*, told them, She had 2000 l. a-piece for them, upon Condition that they prov'd sober, and married suitably to themselves, and did not throw themselves away upon Scoundrels.

The good Family in whose Care they had been, I had resolv'd to take more than ordinary Notice of; and *Amy*, by my Order, had acquainted them with it, and oblig'd my Daughters to promise to submit to their Government, as formerly, and to be rul'd by the honest Man, as by a Father and Counsellor; and engag'd him to treat them as his Children; and to oblige him effectually to take Care of them, and to make his Old-Age comfortable both to him and his Wife, who had been so good to the Orphans: I had order'd her to settle the other 2000 l. *that is to say*, the Interest of it, which was 120 l. a Year, upon them; to be theirs for both their Lives; but to come to my two Daughters after them: This was so just, and was so prudently manag'd by *Amy*, that nothing she ever did for me, pleas'd me better: And in this Posture, leaving my two Daughters with their ancient Friend, and so coming away to me (*as they thought to the East-Indies*) she had prepar'd everything in order to her going over with me to *Holland*; and in this Posture that Matter stood when that unhappy Girl, *who I have said so much of*, broke in upon all our Measures, *as you have heard*; and by an Obstinacy never to be conquer'd or pacify'd, either with Threats or Perswasions, pursu'd her Search after me (*her Mother*) *as I have said*, till she brought me even to the Brink of De-

struction, and wou'd in all probability, have trac'd me out at last, if *Amy* had not by the Violence of her Passion, and by a Way which I had no Knowledge of, and indeed abhorr'd, put a Stop to her; of which I cannot enter into the Particulars here.

However, notwithstanding this, I could not think of going away, and leaving this Work so unfinish'd as *Amy* had threaten'd to do, and for the Folly of one Child, to leave the other to starve; or to stop my determin'd Bounty to the good Family I have mention'd; So, *in a word*, I committed the finishing it all, to my faithful friend the QUAKER, to whom I communicated as much of the old Story as was needful to empower her to perform what *Amy* had promis'd, and to make her talk so much to the Purpose, as one employ'd more remotely than *Amy* had been, needed to do.

To this Purpose she had first of all a full Possession of the Money; and went first to the Honest Man and his Wife and settl'd all the Matter with them; when she talk'd of Mrs. *Amy*, she talk'd of her as one that had been empower'd by the Mother of the Girls, in the *Indies*, but was oblig'd to go back to the *Indies*, and had settl'd all sooner, if she had not been hinder'd by the obstinate Humour of the other Daughter; that she had left Instructions with her for the rest; but that the other had affronted her so much, that she was gone away without doing anything for her; and that now, if anything was done, it must be by fresh orders from the *East-Indies*.

I need not say how punctually my new Agent acted; but which was more, she brought the Old Man and his Wife, and my other Daughter, several times to her House, by which I had an Opportunity, *being there only as a*

Lodger, and a Stranger, to see my other Girl, which I had never done before, since she was a little Child.

The Day I contriv'd to see them, I was dress'd up in a *Quaker's Habit*, and look'd so like a *Quaker*, that it was impossible for them, who had never seen me before, to suppose I had ever been anything else; also my Way of talking was suitable enough to it, for I had learned that long before.

I have not Time here to take Notice what a Surprise it was to me, to see my Child; how it work'd upon my Affections; with what infinite Struggle I master'd a strong Inclination that I had to discover myself to her; how the Girl was the very Counterpart of myself, only much handsomer; and how sweetly and modestly she behav'd; how on that occasion I resolv'd to do more for her, than I had appointed by *Amy, and the like*.

'Tis enough to mention here, that as the settling this Affair made Way for my going on-board, notwithstanding the Absence of my old Agent *Amy*; so however, I left some Hints for *Amy* too, for I did not yet despair of my hearing from her; and that if my good QUAKER should ever see her again, she should let her see them; wherein particularly ordering her to leave the Affair of *Spittle-Fields* just as I had done, in the Hands of my Friend, she shou'd come away to me, upon this Condition nevertheless, that she gave full Satisfaction to my Friend the QUAKER that she had not murther'd my Child; for if she had, *I told her*, I wou'd never see her Face more: How, notwithstanding this, she came over afterwards, without giving my Friend any of that Satisfaction, or any account that she intended to come over.

I can say no more now, but that, *as above*, being arriv'd in *Holland*, with my Spouse and his Son, *formerly men-*

tion'd, I appear'd there with all the Splendour and Equipage suitable to our new Prospect, *as I have already observ'd*.

Here, after some few Years of Flourishing and outwardly happy Circumstances, I fell into a dreadful Course of Calamities, and *Amy* also; the very Reverse of our former Good Days; the Blast of Heaven seem'd to follow the Injury done the poor Girl, by us both; and I was brought so low again, that my Repentance seem'd to be only the Consequence of my Misery, as my Misery was of my Crime.

FINIS

THE HISTORY

Of the remarkable LIFE of

JOHN SHEPPARD

CONTAINING

A particular Account of his many

ROBBERIES and ESCAPES,

Viz.

His robbing the Shop of Mr. *Bains* in White-Horse-Yard of 24 Yards of Fustian. Of his breaking and entering the House of the said Mr. *Bains*, and stealing in Goods and Money to the Value of 20 l. Of his robbing the House of Mr. *Charles* in *May Fair* of Money, Rings, Plate, &c. to the Value of 30 l. Of his robbing the House of Mrs. *Cook* in *Clare-Market*, along with his pretended Wife, and his Brother, to the Value of between 50 and 60 l. Of his breaking the Shop of Mr. *Philips* in *Drury-Lane*, with the same Persons, and stealing Goods of small Value. Of his entering the House of Mr. *Carter*, a Mathematical Instrument Maker in *Wyth-Street*, along with *Anthony Lamb* and *Charles Grace*, and robbing of Mr. *Barton*, a Master Taylor who lodged therein, of Goods and Bonds to the Value of near 300 l. Of his breaking and entering the House of Mr. *Kneebone*, a Woollen-Draper, near the *New Church* in the *Strand*, in Company of *Joseph Blake* alias *Blewskin* and *William Field*, and stealing Goods to the Value of near 50 l. Of his robbing of Mr. *Pargiter* on the Highway near the Turnpike, on the Road to *Hampstead*, along with the said *Blewskin*, Of his robbing a Lady's Woman in her Mistress's Coach on the same Road. Of his robbing also a Stage Coach, with the said *Blewskin*, on the *Hampstead* Road. Likewise of his breaking the Shop of Mr. *Martin* in *Fleet-street*, and stealing 3 silver Watches of 15 l. Value. A L S O

A particular Account of his rescuing his pretended Wife from St. *Giles's* Round-House. Of the wonderful Escape himself made from the said Round-House. Of the miraculous Escape he and his said pretended Wife made together from *New-Prison*, on the 25th of *May* last. Of his surprizing Escape from the Condemn'd Hold of *Newgate* on the 31st of *August*: Together with the true manner of his being retaken; and of his Behaviour in *Newgate*, till the most astonishing and never to be forgotten Escape he made from thence, in the Night of the 15th of *October*. The Whole taken from the most authentick Accounts, as the Informations of divers Justices of the Peace, the several Shop-Keepers above-mention'd, the principal Officers of *Newgate* and *New Prison*, and from the Confession of *Sheppard* made to the Rev. Mr. *Wagstaff*, who officiated for the Ordinary of *Newgate*.

LONDON: Printed and Sold by JOHN APPLEBEE in *Black-Fryers*, J. I. STED, at the *Golden-Ball* near *Chancery-Lane* in *Fleet-street*, and the Booksellers of *London* and *Westminster*. (Price One Shilling.)

THE HISTORY of the remarkable LIFE of JOHN SHEPPARD, CONTAINING A particular Account of his many ROBBERIES and ESCAPES, . . . LONDON: Printed and Sold by JOHN APPLEBEE in Black-Fryers, J. ISTEAD, at the Golden-Ball near Chancery-Lane in Fleet-Street, and the Booksellers of London and Westminster. (Price One Shilling.)

This pamphlet was first published on Oct. 19th, 1724, in an 8vo volume of viii & 56 pages. Sheppard's second escape from Newgate, from "the Strong Room, call'd the Castle" was made during the night of Oct. 15th, and the pamphlet appeared before he had been finally recaptured; the account of "the Methods by which this miraculous Escape was effected," many of which "remain as yet a Secret," must have been added at the last moment; and it is probable that the earlier sheets were in the press before the news of this second escape was known. The phrase "this Eminence of Guilt" (page 168, line 26), was printed in the text as "the fatal Tree," but was altered in an "Erratum" to the present reading; which suggests that the author anticipated a different end to the story.

A second edition appeared on Oct. 26th and a third on Nov. 12th, 1724. The pamphlet is now exceedingly rare, and the publishers are indebted to the Board of Trinity College, Dublin, for the loan of the copy from which the present edition is printed. This edition is a close reprint of the original, the punctuation of which has been followed throughout, except in a few cases where the meaning was confused. Only two emendations of any importance have been made in the text. Lines 21-3 on page 202 are printed in the original as follows:

*would either Laugh, or force Expressions!
when (as an Auditor of the Sermon) he
of Contempt, either of the Preacher, or of
his Discourse.*

The assumption that the first two lines were accidentally transposed, would seem to do less violence to the original, than any alteration of the actual words; and this reading has been adopted in the text. On page 190 lines 16-17 "and that he had [no] other Authority for it," the word [no] has been inserted, as it seems clear that this is the sense of the passage. This is confirmed by the account of the same incident in "A Narrative of all the Robberies, Escapes, etc. of John Sheppard" (see page 214), and by the evidence of "Applebee's Journal," which describes William Field as "a noted Evidence," or informer.

The career of Jonathan Wild, who is frequently mentioned in this pamphlet, and the incident of Blueskin's attack upon him, are dealt with by Defoe in "The True, Genuine, and Perfect Account of the Life and Actions of Jonathan Wild," reprinted in the second volume of "Colonel Jack" in this edition. The Mr. App . . . ee mentioned on page 192, is John Applebee, publisher of many lives of notorious criminals, and proprietor of "The Original Weekly Journal, and Saturday's Post," known as "Applebee's Journal."

.

TO THE
CITIZENS

OF

London and Westminster

GENTLEMEN,

EXperience has confirm'd you in that everlasting Maxim, that there is no other way to protect the Innocent, but by Punishing the Guilty.

Crimes ever were, and ever must be unavoidably frequent in such populous Cities as yours are, being the necessary Consequences, either of the Wants, or the Depravity, of the lowest part of the humane Species.

At this time the most flagrant Offences, as Burning of Dwellings; Burglaries, and Highway Robberies abound; and Frauds, common Felonies, and Forgeries are practis'd without Number; thus not only your Properties, but even your very Lives are every way struck at.

The Legislative Power has not been wanting in providing necessary and wholesome Laws against these Evils, the Executive part whereof (according to your great Privileges) is lodged in your own hands: And the Administration hath at all times applyed proper Remedies and Regulations to the Defects which have happen'd in the Magistracy more immediately under their Jurisdiction.

Through the just and salutary Severities of the Magistrates, publick excessive Gaming has been in a manner suppress'd; and some late Examples of divine Vengeance have overtaken certain of the most notorious lewd Prostitutes of the Town, which together with the laudable endeavours of the great and worthy SOCIETIES, has given no small check to that enormous and spreading Vice.

But here's a Criminal bids Defiance to your Laws, and Justice who declar'd and has manifested that the Bars are not made that can either keep him OUT, or keep him IN, and accordingly hath a second time fled from the very BOSOM OF DEATH.

His History will astonish! and is not compos'd of Fiction, Fable, or Stories plac'd at York, Rome, or Jamaica, but Facts done at your Doors, Facts unheard of, altogether new, Incredible, and yet Uncontestable.

He is gone once more upon his wicked Range in the World. Restless Vengeance is pursuing, and Gentlemen 'tis to be hop'd that she will be assisted by your Endeavours to bring to Justice this notorious Offender.

THE
LIFE
OF
JOHN SHEPPARD, &c.

THIS *John Sheppard*, a Youth both in Age and Person, tho' an old Man in sin; was Born in the Parish of *Stepney* near *London*, in the Year 1702, a Son, Grandson, and great Grandson of a *Carpenter*: His Father died when he was so very Young that he could not recollect that ever he saw him. Thus the burthen of his Maintenance, together with his Brother's and Sister's, lay upon the Shoulders of the Widow Mother, who soon procured an Admittance of her Son *John* into the *Work-House* in *Bishopsgate-Street*, where he continued for the space of a Year and half, and in that time received an Education sufficient to qualifie him for the Trade his Mother design'd him, *viz.* a *Carpenter*: Accordingly she was recommended to Mr. *Wood* in *Witch-Street*, near *Drury-Lane*, as a Master capable of entertaining and instructing her Son: They agreed and Bound he was for the space of seven Years; the Lad proved an early proficient, had a ready and ingenious Hand, and soon became Master of his Business, and gave entire Satisfaction to his Master's Customers, and had the Character of a very sober and orderly Boy. But alas unhappy Youth! before he had compleated six Years of his Apprenticeship, he commenced a fatal Acquaintance with one *Elizabeth Lyon*, otherwise call'd *Edgworth Bess*, from a Town of that Name in *Middlesex* where she was Born, the reputed Wife of a Foot Soldier, and who lived a wicked

and debauch'd Life; and our young *Carpenter* became Enamour'd of her, and they must Cohabit together as Man and Wife.

Now was laid the Foundation of his Ruin; *Sheppard* grows weary of the Yoke of Servitude, and began to dispute with his Master; telling him that his way of Jobbing from House to House, was not sufficient to furnish him with a due Experience in his Trade; and that if he would not see out to undertake some Buildings, he would step into the World for better Information. Mr. *Wood* a mild, sober, honest Man, indulg'd him; and Mrs. *Wood* with Tears, exhorted him against the Company of this lewd Prostitute: But her Man prompted and harden'd by his HARLOT, D---n'd *her Blood*, and threw a Stick at his Mistress, and beat her to the Ground. And being with his Master at Work at Mr. *Britt's* the *Sun* Ale-house near *Islington*, upon a very trivial Occasion fell upon his Master, and beat and bruised him in a most barbarous and shameful Manner. Such a sudden and deplorable Change was there in the Behaviour of this promising young Man. Next ensued a neglect of Duty, both to God and his Master, lying out of Nights, perpetual Jarrings, and Animosities; these and such like, were the Consequences of his intimacy with this she *Lyon*; who by the sequel will appear to have been a main loadstone in attracting of him up to this Eminence of Guilt.

Mr. *Wood* having Reason to suspect, that *Sheppard* had rob'd a Neighbour, began to be in great Fear and Terror for himself. And when his Man came not Home indue season at Nights, bar'd him out; but he made a mere jest of the Locks and Bolts, and enter'd in, and out at Pleasure; and when Mr. *Wood* and his Wife have had all the Reason in the World to believe him Lock'd out, they

have found him very quiet in his Bed the next Morning, such was the power of his early Magic.

Edgworth Bess having stol'n a Gold Ring from a Gentleman, whom she had pick'd up in the Streets, was sent to *St. Giles's Round-house*; *Sheppard* went immediately to his Consort, and after a short Discourse with *Mr. Brown* the Beadle, and his Wife, who had the Care of the Place, he fell upon the poor old Couple, took the Keys from them, and let his Lady out at the Door in spite of all the Out-cries and Opposition they were capable of making.

About *July 1723*, He was by his Master sent to perform a Repair, at the House of *Mr. Bains*, a Peice-Broker in *White-Horse Yard*; he from thence stole a Roll of Fustain, containing 24 Yards, which was afterwards found in his Trunk. This is supposed to be the first Robbery he ever committed, and it was not long e're he Repeated another upon this same *Mr. Bains*, by breaking into his House in the Night-time, and taking out of the *Till* seven Pounds in Money, and Goods to the value of fourteen Pounds more. How he enter'd this House, was a Secret till his being last committed to *Newgate*, when he confess'd that he took up the Iron Bars at the Cellar Window, and after he had done his Business, he nailed them down again, so that *Mr. Bains* never believed his House had been broke; and an innocent Woman a Lodger in the House lay all the while under the weight of a suspicion of committing the Robbery.

Sheppard and his Master had now parted, ten Months before the expiration of his Apprenticeship, a woeful parting to the former; he was gone from a good and careful Patronage, and lay expos'd to, and comply'd with the Temptations of the most wicked Wretches this Town could afford as *Joseph Blake*, alias *Blewskins*, *William*

Field, Doleing, James Sykes, alias Hell and Fury, which last was the first that betray'd, and put him into the Hands of Justice, as will presently appear.

Having deserted his Master's Service, he took Shelter in the House of Mr. *Charles* in *May-Fair*, near *Piccadilly*, and his Landlord having a Necessity for some Repairs in his House, engag'd one Mr. *Panton* a *Carpenter* to Undertake them, and *Sheppard* to assist him as a Journeyman; but on the 23d of *October*, 1723, e're the work was compleat, *Sheppard* took occasion to rob the People of the Effects following, *viz.* seven Pound ten Shillings in Specie, five large silver Spoons, six plain Forks ditto, four Tea-Spoons, six plain Gold Rings, and a Cypher Ring; four Suits of Wearing Apparel, besides Linnen, to a considerable value. This Fact he confess'd to the Reverend Mr. *Wagstaff* before his Escape from the condemn'd Hold of *Newgate*.

Sheppard had a Brother, nam'd *Thomas*, a *Carpenter* by Profession, tho' a notorious *Thief* and *House-breaker* by Practice. This *Thomas* being committed to *Newgate* for breaking the House of Mrs. *Mary Cook* a *Linnen-Draper*, in *Clare-street*, *Clare-Market*, on the 5th of *February* last, and stealing Goods to the value of between 50, and 60 l., he impeach'd his Brother *John Sheppard*, and *Edgworth Bess* as being concerned with him in the Fact; and these three were also Charg'd with being concern'd together, in breaking the House of Mr. *William Phillips* in *Drury-Lane*, and stealing divers Goods, the Property of Mrs. *Kendrick* a Lodger in the House, on the 14th of the said *February*: All possible endeavours were us'd by Mrs. *Cook*, and Mr. *Phillips*, to get *John Sheppard* and *Edgworth Bess* Apprehended, but to no purpose, till the following Accident.

Sheppard was now upon his wicked Range in *London*, committing Robberies every where at Discretion; but one Day meeting with his Acquaintance, *James Sykes*, alias *Hell and Fury*, sometimes a Chair-man, and at others a Running Foot-man; this *Sykes* invited him to go to one *Redgate's*, a Viſtualling-house near the *Seven Dials*, to play at *Skettles*; *Sheppard* comply'd, and *Sykes* secretly sent for Mr. *Price* a Conſtable in *St. Giles's Parish*, and Charg'd him with his Friend *Sheppard* for the Robbing of Mrs. *Cook*, &c. *Sheppard* was carried before Juſtice *Parry*, who order'd him to *St. Giles's Round-house* till the next Morning for farther Examination: He was confin'd in the Upper part of the Place, being two Stories from the Ground, but e're two Hours came about, by only the help of a Razor, and the Stretcher of a Chair, he broke open the Top of the Round house, and tying together a Sheet and Blanket, by them descended into the Church-yard and Escap'd, leaving the Parish to Repair the Damage, and Repent of the Affront put upon his Skill and Capacity.

On the 19th of *May* laſt in the Evening, *Sheppard* with another Robber named *Benson*, were paſſing thro' *Leiceſter-fields*, where a Gentleman ſtood accusing a woman with an attempt to ſteal his Watch; a Mobb was gathered about the Diſputants, and *Sheppard's* Companion being a *Maſter*, got in amongſt them and pick'd the Gentleman's Pocket in good earneſt of the Watch; the Scene was ſurprizingly chang'd, from an imaginary Robbery to a real one; and in a moment enſued an Out-cry of *ſtop Thief*, *Sheppard* and *Benson* took to their Heels, and *Sheppard* was ſeiz'd by a Serjeant of the Guard at *Leiceſter* Houſe, crying out *ſtop Thief* with much earneſtneſs. He was convey'd to *St. Ann's Round Houſe* in *Soho*,

and kept secure till the next Morning, when *Edgworth Bess* came to visit him, who was seiz'd also; they were carried before Justice *Walters*, when the People in *Drury-Lane* and *Clare-Market* appeared, and charged them with the Robberies aforementioned: But *Sheppard* pretending to Impeach certain of his Accomplices, the Justice committed them to *New-Prison*, with intent to have them soon removed to *Newgate*, unless there came from them some useful Discoveries. *Sheppard* was now a second time in the hands of Justice, but how long he intended to keep in them, the Reader will soon be able to Judge.

He and his MATE were now in a strong and well guarded Prison, himself loaded with a pair of double *Links* and *Basils* of about fourteen pounds weight, and confined together in the safest Appartment call'd *Newgate Ward*; *Sheppard* conscious of his Crimes, and knowing the *Information* he had made to be but a blind Amusement that would avail him nothing; he began to Meditate an Escape. They had been thus detained for about four Days, and their Friends having the Liberty of seeing them, furnish'd him with Implements proper for his Design; accordingly Mr. *Sheppard* goes to work, and on the 25th of *May* being *Whitson Monday* at about two of the Clock in the Morning, he had compleated a practicable breach, and sawed of his Fetters; having with unheard of Diligence and Dexterity, cut off an Iron Bar from the Window, and taken out a Muntin, or Bar of the most solid Oak of about nine Inches in thickness, by boring it thro' in many Places, a work of great Skill and Labour; they had still five and twenty Foot to descend from the ground; *Sheppard* fasten'd a Sheet and Blanket to the Bars, and causes Madam to take off her Gown and

Petticoat, and sent her out first, and she being more Corpulent than himself, it was with great Pain and Difficulty that he got her through the Interval, and observing his Directions, she was instantly down, and more frightened than hurt; the *Phylosopher* follow'd and lighted with Ease and Pleasure; But where are they Escap'd to? Why out of one Prison into another. The Reader is to understand, that the *New Prison* and *Clerkenwell Bridewell* lye Contiguous to one another, and they are got into the Yard of the latter, and have a Wall of twenty-two Foot high to Scale, before their Liberty is perfected; *Sheppard* far from being unprepared to surmount this Difficulty, has his Gimblets and Peircers ready, and makes a Scaleing-Ladder. The Keepers and Prisoners of both Places are a sleep in their Beds; he Mounts his *Bagage*, and in less than ten Minutes carries both her and himself over this Wall, and compleats an entire Escape. Altho' his Escape from the Condemn'd Hold of *Newgate*, has made a far greater Noise in the World, than that from this Prison hath; it has been allow'd by all the *Jayl-Keepers* in *London*, that one so Miraculous was never perform'd before in *England*; the broken Chains and Bars are kept at *New Prison* to testifie, and preserve the Memory of this extraordinary Villain.

Sheppard not warn'd by this Admonition, returns like a *Dog to his Vomit*, and comes Secretly into his Master *Wood's* Neighbourhood in *Witch-street*, and concerts Measures with one *Anthony Lamb*, an Apprentice to Mr. *Carter* a Mathematical Instrument-maker, for Robbing of Mr. *Barton* a Master Taylor; a Man of Worth and Reputation, who Lodg'd in Mr. *Carter's* House. *Charles Grace*, a graceless Cooper was let into the Secret, and consented, and resolved to Act his Part. The 16th of

June last was appointed; *Lamb* accordingly lets *Grace* and *Sheppard* into the House at Mid-Night; and they all goup to Mr. *Barton's* Appartment well arm'd with Pistols, and enter'd his Rooms, without being disturb'd. *Grace* was Posted at Mr. *Barton's* Bedside with a loaded Pistol, and positive Orders to shoot him through the Head, if in case he awak'd: *Sheppard* being engag'd in opening the Trunks and Boxes, the mean while. It luckily happen'd for Mr. *Barton*, that he slept Sounder than usual that Night, as having come from a Merry-making with some Friends; tho' poor Man little Dreaming in what dreadful Circumstances. They carried off in Notes, and Bonds, Guineas, Cloaths, Made and Unmade, to the value of between two and three Hundred Pounds; besides a Padesuoy Suit of Cloaths, worth about eighteen or twenty Pounds more; which having been made for a Corpulent Gentleman, *Sheppard* had them reduc'd, and fitted for his own Size and Wear, as designing to Appear and make a Figure among the *Beau Monde*. *Grace* and *Sheppard*, having disposed of the Goods at an Ale-house in *Lewkenor's Lane* (a Rendezvous of Robbers and Ruffians) took their Flight, and *Grace* has not been since heard of. *Lamb* was apprehended, and carried before Justice *Newton*, and made an ample Confession; and there being nothing but that against him at his Tryal, and withal, a favourable Prosecution, he came off with a Sentence of Transportation only. He as well as *Sheppard* has since confirm'd all the above particulars, and with this Addition, viz. That it was Debated among them to have Murder'd all the People in the House, save one Person.

About the latter End of the same Month, *June*, Mr. *Kneebone*, a Woollen-Draper near the New Church in the *Strand*, receiv'd a Caution from the Father of *Anthony*

Lamb, who intimated to Mr. *Kneebone* that his House was intended to be broke open and robb'd that very Night. Mr. *Kneebone* prepar'd for the Event, ordering his Servants to sit up, and gave Directions to the Watchman in the Street to observe his House: At about two in the Morning *Sheppard* and his Gang were about the Door, a Maid-Servant went to listen, and heard one of the Wretches, say, *Da - - n him, if they could not enter that Night, they would another, and would have 300 l. of his*, (meaning) Mr. *Kneebone's* Money. They went off, and nothing more was heard of them till Sunday the 12th Day of July following, when *Joseph Blake*, alias *Blewskins*, *John Sheppard*, and *William Field* (as himself Swears) came about 12 o'Clock at Night, and cut two large Oaken-Bars over the Cellar-Window, at the back part of the House in *Little-Drury-Lane*, and so entered; Mr. *Kneebone*, and his Family being at Rest, they proceeded to open a Door at the Foot of the Cellar-Stairs, with three Bolts, and a large Padlock upon it, and then came up into the Shop and wrench'd off the Hasp, and Padlock that went over the Press, and arriv'd at their desir'd Booty; they continu'd in the House for three Hours, and carry'd off with them One Hundred and eight Yards of Broad Woollen Cloth, five Yards of blue Bays, a light Tye-Wig, and Beaver-Hat, two Silver Spoons, an Handkerchief, and a Penknife. In all to the value of near fifty Pounds.

The Sunday following, being the 19th of July, *Sheppard* and *Blewskins* were out upon the *Hampstead* Road, and there stopt a Coach with a Ladies Woman in it, from whom they took but Half-a-Crown; all the Money then about her; the Footman behind the Coach came down, and exerted himself; but *Sheppard* sent him in hast up to his Post again, by threat of his Pistol.

The next Night being the 20th of *July*, about Nine, they robb'd Mr. *Pargiter*, a Chandler of *Hamstead*, near the Halfway-House; *Sheppard* after his being taken at *Finchley* was particularly examin'd about this Robbery. The Reverend Mr. *Wagstaff* having receiv'd a Letter from an unknown Hand, with two Questions, to be propos'd to *Sheppard*, viz. Whether he did Rob *John Pargiter*, on *Monday* the 20th of *July*, about Nine at Night, between the *Turnpike* and *Hamstead*; How much Money he took from him? Whither *Pargiter* was Drunk, or not, and if he had Rings or Watch about him, when robb'd? which Request was comply'd with, and *Sheppard* affirm'd, that Mr. *Pargiter* was very much in Liquor, having a great Coat on; neither Rings on his Fingers or Watch, and only three Shillings in his Pocket, which they took from him, and that *Blewskins* knock him down twice with the Butt-end of his Pistol to make sure Work, (tho' Excess of drink had done that before) but *Sheppard* did in kindness raise him up as often.

The next Night, *July* 21, they stopt a Stage-Coach, and took from a Passenger in it, Twenty-two Shillings, and were so expeditious in the Matter, that *not two Words* were made about the Bargain.

Now Mr. *Sheppard's* long and wicked Course seemingly draws towards a Period. Mr. *Kneebone* having apply'd to *Jonathan Wild*, and set forth Advertisements in the Papers, complaining of his Robbery; on *Tuesday* the 22d of *July* at Night *Edgworth Bess* was taken in a Brandy-shop, near *Temple-Bar* by *Jonathan Wild*; she being much terrify'd discover'd where *Sheppard* was: A Warrant was accordingly issued by Justice *Blackerby*, and the next Day he was Apprehended, at the House of *Blewskin's* Mother, in *Rose-Mary-Lane*, by one *Quilt*, a

Domestick of Mr. *Wild's*, though not without great opposition, for he clapt a loaded Pistol to *Quilt's* Breast and attempted to shoot him, but the Pistol miss'd fire; he was brought back to *New Prison*, confin'd in the Dungeon; and the next Day carried before Justice *Blackerby*. Upon his Examination he Confess'd the three Robberies on the High-way aforementioned, as also the Robbing of Mr. *Bains*, Mr. *Barton*, and Mr. *Kneebone*; he was committed to *Newgate*, and at the Sessions of *Oyer and Terminer*, and Goal delivery, holden at the *Old-Baily*, on the 12th, 13th and 14th of *August*, he was try'd upon three several Indictments, *viz.* First for breaking the House of *William Philips*.

John Sheppard, of the Parish of *St. Martin in the Fields*, was indicted for breaking the House of *William Philips*, and stealing divers Goods, the 14th of *February* last. But there not being sufficient Evidence against the Prisoner, he was acquitted.

He was also indicted a Second Time, of *St. Clement Danes*, for breaking the House of *Mary Cook*, the 5th of *February* last, and stealing divers Goods: But the Evidence against the Prisoner being defficient as to this Indictment also, he was acquitted.

He was also indicted the Third Time, of *St. Mary Savoy*, for breaking the House of *William Kneebone*, in the Night-Time, and stealing 108 Yards of Woollen Cloth, the 12th of *July* last. The Prosecutor depos'd, That the Prisoner had some Time since been his Servant, and when he went to Bed, the Time mention'd in the Indictment, about 11 a-Clock at Night, he saw all the Doors and Windows fast; but was call'd up about four in the Morning, and found his House broke open, the Bars of a Cellar-Window having been cut, and the

Bolts of the Door that comes up Stairs drawn, and the Padlock wrench'd off, and the Shutter in the Shop broken, and his Goods gone; whereupon suspecting the Prisoner, he having committed ill Actions thereabouts before, he acquainted *Jonathan Wild* with it, and he procur'd him to be apprehended. That he went to the Prisoner in *New Prison* and asking how he could be so ungrateful to rob him, after he had shown him so much Kindness? The Prisoner own'd he had been ungrateful in doing so, informing him of several Circumstances as to the Manner of committing the Fact, but said he had been drawn into it by ill Company.

Jonathan Wild, depos'd, The Prosecutor came to him, and desir'd him to enquire after his Goods that had been stolen, telling him he suspected the Prisoner to have been concern'd in the Robbery, he having before committed some Robberies in the Neighbourhood. That inquiring after him, and having heard of him before, he was inform'd that he was an Acquaintance of *Joseph Blake*, alias *Blewskins*, and *William Field*: Whereupon he sent for *William Field*, who came to him; upon which he told him, if he would make an ingenuous Confession, he believ'd he could prevail with the Court to make him an Evidence. That he did make a Discovery of the Prisoner, upon which he was apprehended, and also of others since convicted, and gave an Account of some Parcels of the Cloth, which were found accordingly. *William Field* depos'd, That the Prisoner told him, and *Joseph Blake*, that he knew a *Ken* where they might get something of Worth. That they went to take a View of the Prosecutor's House, but dis[ap]prov'd of the Attempt, as not thinking it easy to be perform'd: But the Prisoner perswaded them that it might easily be done, he knowing the House, he

having liv'd with the Prosecutor. That thereupon he cut the Cellar Bar, went into the Cellar, got into the Shop, and brought out three Parcels of Cloth, which they carried away. The Prisoner had also confest the Fact when he was apprehended, and before the Justice. The Fact being plainly prov'd, the Jury found him guilty of the Indictment.

Sentence of Death was pronounc'd upon him accordingly. Several other Prosecutions might have been brought against him, but this was thought sufficient to rid the World of so Capital an Offender: He beg'd earnestly for Transportation, to the most extream Foot of his Majesty's Dominions; and pleaded Youth, and Ignorance as the Motive which had precipitated him into the Guilt; but the Court, deaf to his Importunities, as knowing him, and his repeated Crimes to be equally flagrant, gave him no satisfactory Answer: He return'd to his dismal Abode, the Condemn'd Hold, where were Nine more unhappy Wretches in as dreadful Circumstances as himself. The Court being at *Windsor*, the Malefactors had a longer Respite than is usual; during that Recess, *James Harman*, *Lumley*, *Davis* and *Sheppard* agreed upon an Escape, concerted Measures, and provided Instruments to make it effectual; but put off the Execution of their Design, on Account [of] the two Gentlemen having their hopes of Life daily renewed by the favourable Answers they receiv'd from some considerable Persons; but those vanishing the day before their Execution, and finding their Sentence irreversible, they two dropt their hopes, together with the Design, they form'd for an Escape, and so in earnest prepar'd to meet Death on the Morrow, (which they accordingly did.) 'Twas on this Day, Mr. *Davis* gave *Sheppard* the

Watch Springs, Files, Saws, &c. to Effect his own Release; and knowing that a Warrant was Hourly expected for his Execution with Two others, on the *Friday* following; he thought it high time to look about him, for he had waited his Tryal, saw his Conviction, and heard his Sentence with some patience; but finding himself irrespitably decreed for Death, he could sit passive no longer, and on the very Day of the Execution of the former; whilst they were having their Fetters taken off, in order for going to the Tree, that Day he began to saw, *Saturday* made a progress; but *Sunday* omitted, by Reason of the Concourse in the *Lodge: Edgworth Bess* having been set at Liberty, had frequent Access to him, with others of his Acquaintance. On *Monday* the Death *Warrant* came from *Windsor*, appointing that he, together with *Joseph Ward*, and *Anthony Upton* should be Executed on the *Friday* following, being the 4th of *September*. The Keepers acquainted him therewith, and desir'd him to make good use of that short Time. He thank'd them, said *he would follow their Advice, and prepare. Edgworth Bess*, and another Woman had been with him at the Door of the Condemn'd Hold best part of the Afternoon; between five and six he desir'd the other Prisoners, except *Stephen Fowles* to remain above, while he offer'd something in private to his Friends at the Door; they comply'd, and in this interval he got the Spike asunder, which made way for the Skeleton to pass with his Heels foremost, by the Assistance of *Fowles*, whom he most ungenerously betray'd to the Keepers after his being retaken, and the Fellow was as severely punish'd for it.

Having now got clear of his Prison, he took Coach disguis'd in a Night Gown at the corner of the *Old Bailly*, along with a Man who waited for him in the Street (and

is suppos'd to be *Page* the Butcher) ordering the Coachman to drive to *Black-Fryers Stairs*, where his prostitute gave him the Meeting, and they three took Boat, and went a Shoar at the *Horse Ferry* at *Westminster*, and at the *White-Hart* they went in, Drank, and stay'd sometime; thence they adjourn'd to a Place in *Holbourn*, where by the help of a Saw he quitted the Chains he had brought with him from *Newgate*; and then like a Freeman took his Ramble through the City and came to *Spittle-Fields*, and there lay with *Edgworth Bess*.

It may be easy to imagine what an alarm his Escape gave to the Keepers of *Newgate*, three of their People being at the farther End of the *Lodge*, engag'd in a Discourse concerning his wonderful Escape from *New-Prison*, and what Caution ought to be us'd, lest he should give them the slip, at that very Instant as he perfected it.

On *Tuesday* he sent for *William Page* an Apprentice to a Butcher in *Clare-Market*, who came to him, and being Pennyless, he desir'd *Page* to give him what Assistance he could to make his way, and being a Neighbour and Acquaintance, he comply'd with it; but ere he would do any thing, he consulted a near Relation, who as he said, encourag'd him in it; nay, put him upon it; so meeting with this Success in his Application to his Friend, and probably an Assistance in the Pocket, he came to *Sheppard* having bought him a new blue *Butcher's* Frock, and another for himself; and so both took their Rout to *Warnden* in *Northamptonshire*, where they came to a Relation of *Page's*, who receiv'd and Entertain'd them kindly, the People lying from their own Bed to Accommodate them. *Sheppard* pretending to be a *Butcher's* Son in *Clare-Market*, who was going farther in the Country to his Friends, and that *Page* was so kind as

to *Accompany* him; but they as well as their Friend became tir'd of one another; the *Butchers* having but one Shilling left, and the People poor, and Consequently unable to subsist two such Fellows, after a stay of three or four Days, they return'd, and came for *London*, and reach'd the City on *Tuesday* the 8th of *September*, calling by the way at *Black-Mary's-Hole*, and Drinking with several of their Acquaintance, and then came into *Bishopsgate Street*, to one *Cooley's* a *Brandysshop*; where a *Cobler* being at Work in his Stall, stept out and Swore *there was* Sheppard; *Sheppard* hearing him, departed immediately. In the Evening they came into *Fleet-Street*, at about Eight of the Clock, and observing Mr. *Martin's* a Watchmaker's Shop to be open, and a little Boy only to look after it: *Page* goes in and asks the Lad whether Mr. *Taylor* a *Watchmaker* lodg'd in the House? being answer'd in the Negative, he came away, and Reports the Disposition of the Place: *Sheppard* now makes Tryal of his old Master-peice; fixeth a Nail Peircer into the Door post, fastens the Knocker thereto with Pack thread, breaks the Glass, and takes out three *Silver Watches* of 15*l.* value, the Boy seeing himtake them, but could not get out to pursue him, by reason of his Contrivance. One of the Watches he Pledg'd for a Guinea and Half. The same Night they came into *Witch-Street*, *Sheppard* going into his *Master's* Yard, and calling for his Fellow 'Prentice, his Mistress heard, knew his Voice, and was dreadfully frightened; he next went to the *Cock and Pye Ale-House* in *Drury-Lane*, sent for a *Barber* his Acquaintance, drank Brandy and eat Oysters in the view of several People: *Page* waiting all the while at the Door, the whole Neighbourhood being alarm'd, yet none durst attempt him, for fear of Pistols, &c. He had vow'd Revenge upon a

poor Man as kept a Dairy-Cellar, at the End of *White-Horse-Yard*, who having seen him at *Islington* after his Escape, and engag'd not to speak of it, broke his Promise; wherefore *Sheppard* went to his Residence took the Door off the Hinges and threw it down amongst all the Man's Pans, [and] Pipkins, and caus'd a Deluge of Cream and Milk all over the Cellar.

This Night he had a narrow Escape, one Mr. *Ireton* a Sheriff's Officer seeing him and *Page* pass thro' *Drury-Lane*, at about Ten o'Clock, pursu'd 'em, and laid hold of *Page* instead of *Sheppard*, who got off; thus *Ireton* missing the main Man, and thinking *Page* of no Consequence, let him go after him.

Edgworth Bess had been apprehended by *Jonathan Wild*, and by Sir *Francis Forbes* one of the Aldermen of *London*, committed to the *Poultry-Compter*, for being aiding and assisting to *Sheppard* in his Escape; the Keepers and others terrify'd and purg'd her as much as was possible to discover where he was, but had it been in her Inclination, it was not in her Power so to do, as it manifestly appear'd soon after.

The People about the *Strand*, *Witch-street* and *Drury-Lane*, whom he had Robb'd, and who had prosecuted him were under great Apprehensions and Terror, and in particular Mr. *Kneebone*, on whom he vow'd a bloody Revenge; because he refus'd to sign a Petition in his behalf to the *Recorder* of *London*. This Gentleman was forc'd to keep arm'd People up in his House every Night till he was Re-taken, and had the same fortify'd in the strongest manner. Several other Shop-keepers in this Neighbourhood were also put to great Expence and Trouble to Guard themselves against this dreadful Villain.

The Keepers of *Newgate*, whom the rash World loaded with Infamy, stigmatiz'd and branded with the Title of Persons guilty of Bribery; for Connivance at his Escape, they and what Posse in their Power, either for Love or Money did Contribute their utmost to undeceive a wrong notion'd People. Their Vigilance was remarkably indefatigable, sparing neither Money nor Time, Night nor Day to bring him back to his deserv'd Justice. After many Intelligences, which they endeavour'd for, and receiv'd, they had one which prov'd very Successful. Having learnt for a certainty that their Haunts was about *Finchley Common*, and being very well assur'd of the very House where they lay; on *Thursday* the 10th of *September*, a posse of Men, both of Spirit and Conduct, furnish'd with Arms proper for their Design, went for *Finchley*, some in a Coach and Four, and others on Horseback. They dispers'd themselves upon the *Common* afore-said, in order to make their View, where they had not been long e're they came in Sight of *SHEPPARD* in Company of *WILLIAM PAGE*, habited like two *Butchers* in new blue Frocks, with white Aprons tuck'd round their Wastes.

Upon *Sheppard's* seeing *Langley* a Turnkey at *Newgate*, he says to his Companion *Page*, *I see a Stag*; upon which their Courage dropt; knowing that now their dealing way of Business was almost at an End; however to make their Flight as secure as they could, they thought it advisable to take to a Foot-path, to cut off the pursuit of the *Newgate* Cavalry; but this did not prove most successful; *Langley* came up with *Page* (who was hindermost) and Dismounting with Pistol in Hand, commands *Page* to throw up his Hands, which he trembling did, begging for Life, desiring him to *Fisk* him, viz. (search

him,) which he accordingly did, and found a broad Knife and File; having this disarm'd him, he takes the *Chubb* along with him in quest of the slippery *Ele, Sheppard*; who had taken Shelter in an old Stable, belonging to a Farm-House; the pursuit was close, the House invested, and a Girl seeing his Feet as he stood up hid, discover'd him. *Austin* a Turnkey first attach'd his Person, *Langley* seconded him, *Ireton* an Officer help'd to Enclose, and happy was the hindermost who aided in this great Enterprise. He being shock'd with the utmost Fear, told them he submitted, and desir'd they would let him live as long as he could, which they did, and us'd him mildly; upon searching him they found a broad Knife with two of the Watches as he had taken out of Mr. *Martin's* Shop, one under each Armpit; and now having gain'd their Point, and made themselves Masters of what they had often endeavoured for, they came with their *Lost Sheep* to a little House on the *Common* that sold Liquors, with this Inscription on the Sign, *I have brought my Hogs to a fair Market*; which our two unfortunate *Butchers* under their then unhappy Circumstances, had too sad Reason to apply to themselves. *Sheppard* had by this time recover'd his surprize, grew calm and easy, and desir'd them to give him Brandy; they did, and were all good Friends, and Company together.

They adjourn'd with their Booty to another Place, where was waiting a Coach and Four to Convey it to Town, with more Speed and Safety; and Mr. *Sheppard* arriv'd at his old Mansion, at about two in the Afternoon. At his a-lighting, he made a sudden Spring; He declar'd his Intention was to have slipt under the Coach, and had a Race for it; he was put into the Condemn'd-Hold, and chain'd down to the Floor with double *Basels* about his

feet, &c. Page was carried before Sir *Francis Forbes*, and committed to the same Prison for Accompanying and aiding *Sheppard* in his Escape. The prudence of Mr. *Pitt* caus'd a Separation between him and his Brother the first Night, as a Means to prevent any ensuing Danger, by having two Heads, which (according to our Proverbial Saying) *are better than one*.

The Joy the People of *Newgate* conceiv'd on this Occasion is inexpressible, *Te Deum* was Sung in the *Lodge*, and nothing but Smiles, and Bumpers, were seen there for many Days together. But *Jonathan Wild* unfortunately happen'd to be gone upon a wrong Scent after him to *Sturbridge*, and Lost a Share of the Glory.

His Escape and his being so suddenly Re-taken made such a Noise in the Town, that it was thought all the common People would have gone Mad about him; there being not a *Porter* to be had for Love nor Money, nor getting into an Ale-house, for *Butchers*, *Shoemakers* and *Barbers*, all engag'd in Controversies, and Wagers, about *Sheppard*. *Newgate* Night and Day surrounded with the Curious from *St. Giles's* and *Rag-Fair*, and *Tyburn Road* daily lin'd with Women and Children; and the *Gallows* as carefully watch'd by Night, lest he should be hang'd *Incog*. For a Report of that nature, obtain'd much upon the Rabble; In short, it was a Week of the greatest Noise and Idleness among Mechanicks that has been known in London, and *Parker* and *Pettis*, two *Lyricks*, subsisted many Days very comfortably upon *Ballads* and *Letters* about *Sheppard*. The vulgar continu'd under great Doubts and Difficulties, in what would be his Case; and whether the *Old Warrant*, or a *New One* must be made for his Execution, or a New Tryal, &c. were the great Questions as arose, and occasion'd various Reasonings

and Speculation, till a News Paper, call'd the *Daily Journal* set them all to rights by the Publication of the Account following, viz. 'J. Sheppard having been Convicted of Burglary, and Felony, and received Sentence of Death, and afterwards escap'd from *Newgate*; and being since Re-taken; we are assur'd that it must be prov'd in a *Regular*, and *Judicial* way, that he is the same Person, who was so Convicted and made his Escape, before a Warrant can be obtain'd for his Execution; and that this Affair will be brought before the Court at the *Old Baily* the next Sessions.' This was enough; People began to grow calm and easy and got *Shav'd* and their Shoes *finish'd*, and Business returned into its former Channel, the Town resolving to wait the *Sessions* with Patience.

The Reverend Mr. *Wagstaff*, who officiated in the absence of the *Ordinary*, renew'd his former Acquaintance with Mr. *Sheppard*, and examin'd him in a particular manner concerning his Escape from the Condemn'd Hold: He sincerely disown'd, that all, or any, belonging to the Prison were privy thereto; but related it as it has been describ'd. He declar'd that *Edgworth Bess*, who had hitherto pass'd for his Wife, was not really so: This was by some thought to be in him Base, and Ungenerous in that, as she had Contributed towards his Escape, and was in Custody on that Account, it might render her more liable to Punishment, than if she had been thought his Wife; but he endeavour'd to acquit himself, by saying, that she was the sole Author of all his Misfortunes; That she betray'd him to *Jonathan Wild*, at the time he was taken in *Rosemary-Lane*; and that when he was contriving his Escape, she disobey'd his orders, as when being requir'd to attend at the Door of the Condemn'd-Hold by

Nine, or Ten in the Morning to facilitate his Endeavours, she came not till the Evening, which he said, was an ungrateful Return for the care he had taken in setting her at Liberty from *New-Prison*; and thus Justify'd himself in what he had done, and said he car'd not what became of her.

He was also Examined about Mr. *Martin's* Watches; and whether *Page* was privy to that Robbery; he carefully guarded himself against uttering any thing that might affect him, peremptorily declar'd him Innocent of that, as well as of being privy to his Escape, and said, that he only out of Kindness, as being an old Companion, was resolv'd to share in his Fortunes after he had Escap'd.

He was again continually meditating a second Escape, as appear'd by his own Hardiness, and the Instruments found upon him, on *Saturday* the 12th, and *Wednesday* the 16th of *September*; the first Time a small File was found conceal'd in his Bible, and the second Time two Files, a Chisel and an Hammer being hid in the Rushes of a Chair; and whenever a Question was mov'd to him, when, or by what Means those Implements came to his Hands; he would passionately fly out, and say, *How can you? you always ask me these, and such like Questions*; and in a particular manner, when he was ask'd, Whether his Companion *Page* was an Accomplice with him, either in the affair of the Watches, or any other? (he reply'd) *That if he knew, he would give no direct Answer*, thinking it to be a Crime in him to detect the Guilty.

It was thought necessary by the Keepers to remove him from the Condemn'd-Hold to a Place, call'd the *Castle*, in the Body of the Goal, and to Chain him down to two large Iron Staples in the Floor; the Concourse of

People of tolerable Fashion to see him was exceeding Great, he was always Chearful and Pleasant to a Degree, as turning almost every thing as was said into a Jest and Banter.

Being one *Sunday* at the Chapel, a Gentleman belonging [ing] to the *Lord Mayor*, ask'd a Turnkey, Which was *Sheppard*? The Man pointed to him. Says *Sheppard*, yes Sir, *I am the Sheppard, and all the Goalers in the Town are my Flock, and I cannot stir into the Country, but they are all at my Heels Baughing after me, &c.*

He told Mr. *Robins*, the *City Smith*, *That he had procur'd him a small Job, and that whoever it was that put the Spikes on the Condemn'd-Hold was an honest Man, for a better peice of Metal, says he, I never wrought upon in my Life.*

He was loth to believe his frequent Robberies were an Injury to the Publick, for he us'd to say, *That if they were ill in one Respect, they were as good in another, and that though he car'd not for Working much himself, yet he was desirous that others should not stand Idle, more especially those of his own Trade, who were always Repairing of his Breaches.*

When serious, and that but seldom, he would Reflect on his past wicked Life. He declar'd to us, that for several Years of his Apprenticeship he had an utter abhorrence to Women of the Town, and us'd to pelt them with Dirt when they have fell in his way; till a *Button-Mould-Maker* his next Neighbour, left off that Business, and set up a Victualling-house in *Lewkenbor's-Lane*, where himself and other young Apprentices resorted on *Sundays*, and at all other Opportunities. At this House began his Acquaintance with *Edgworth Bess*. His Sentiments were strangely alter'd, and from an Aversion to those Prosti-

tutes, he had a more favourable Opinion, and even Conversation with them, till he Contracted an ill Distemper, which as he said, he cur'd himself of by a Medicine of his own preparing.

He inveigh'd bitterly against his Brother *Thomas* for putting him into the Information, for Mrs. *Cook's* Robbery, and pretended that all the Mischiefs that attended him was owing to that Matter. He acknowledg'd that he was concern'd in that Fact, and that his said Brother broke into his Lodgings, and stole from him all his Share and more of the acquir'd Booty.

He oftentimes averr'd, that *William Field* was no ways concern'd in Mr. *Kneebone's* Robbery; but that being a Brother of the Quill, *Blewskin* and himself told him the particulars, and manner of the Facts, and that all he Swore against him at his Tryal was False, and that he had [no] other Authority for it, than what came out of their (*Sheppard* and *Blewskin*) Mouths, who actually committed the Fact.

And moreover, that *Field* being acquainted with their Ware-house (a Stable) near the *Horse-Ferry* at *Westminster*, which *Sheppard* had hir'd, and usually repositied therein the Goods he stole; he came one Night, and broke open the same, and carried off the best part of the Effects taken out of Mr. *Kneebone's* Shop.

Sheppard said he thought this to be one of the greatest Villainies that could be acted, for another to come and Plunder them of Things for which they had so honourably ventur'd their Lives, and wish'd that *Field*, as well as his Brother *Tom* might meet with forgiveness for it.

He declar'd himself frequently against the Practice of

Whidling, or *Impeaching*, which he said, had made dreadful Havock, among the *Thieves*, and much lamented the depravity of the *Brethren* in that Respect, and said that if all were but such *Tight-Cocks* as himself, the *Reputation* of the *British Thievery* might be carried to a far greater height than it had been done for many Ages, and that there would then be but little Necessity for Jaylors and Hangmen.

These and such like were his constant Discourses, when Company went up with the Turnkeys to the *Castle* to see him, and few or none went away without leaving him Money for his Support; in which he abounded, and did therewith some small Charities to the other Prisoners; however, he was abstemious and sparing enough in his Diet.

Among the many Schemes laid by his Friends, for the preserving himself after his Escape, we were told of a most Remarkable one, propos'd by an ingenious Person, who advis'd, that he might be Expeditiously, and Secretly convey'd to the Palace at *Windsor*, and there to prostrate his Person, and his Case at the Feet of a most Gracious Prince, and his Case being so very singular and new, it might in great probability move the Royal Fountain of unbounded Clemency; but he declin'd this Advice, and follow'd the Judgment and Dictates of *Butchers*, which very speedily brought him very near the Door of the *Slaughter-house*.

On the 4th of *September*, the Day as *Joseph Ward*, and *Anthony Upton* were Executed, there was publish'd a whimsical Letter, as from *Sheppard*, to *Jack Ketch*, which afforded Diversion to the Town, and Bread to the Author, which is as followeth, *viz.*

SIR,

"I Thank you for the Favour you intended me this Day: I am a Gentleman, and allow you to be the same, and I hope can forgive Injuries; fond Nature prompted, I obey'd, Oh, propitious Minute! and to show that I am in Charity, I am now drinking your Health, and a *Bon Repô* to poor *Joseph* and *Anthony*. I am gone a few Days for the Air, but design speedily to embark; and this Night I am going upon a Mansion for a Supply; it's a stout Fortification, but what Difficulties can't I encounter, when, dear *Jack*, you find that Bars and Chains are but Trifling Obstacles in the way of your Friend and Servant."

From my Residence in JOHN SHEPPARD.
Terra Australi incognito.

"P.S. "Pray my Service to Mr. Or--di--y and to Mr. App--ee.

On *Saturday* the 10th of *October*, *Anthony Lamb*, and *Thomas Sheppard*, with 95 other Felons were carried from *Newgate* on Shipboard, for Transportation to the Plantations; the last begg'd to have an opportunity given him of taking his final Leave of his Brother *John*; but this was not to be Granted, and the greatest Favour that could be obtain'd, was that on the *Sunday* before they had an Interview at the *Chapel*, but at such a distance, that they neither saluted, or shook Hands, and the Reason given for it, was that no Implements might be convey'd to *Sheppard* to assist him in making an Escape.

This Caution seem'd to be absolutely necessary, for it

appear'd soon after that *Sheppard* found Means to release himself from the Staples to which he was Chain'd in the *Castle*, by unlocking a great Padlock with a Nail, which he had pickt up on the Floor, and endeavour'd to pass up the Chimney, but was prevented by the stout Iron Bars fix'd in his way, and wanted nothing but the smallest File to have perfected his Liberty. When the Assistants of the Prison, came as usual with his Victuals, they began to examine his Irons; to their great Surprize they found them loose, and ready to be taken off at Pleasure. Mr. *Pitt* the Head Keeper, and his Deputies were sent for, and *Sheppard* finding this Attempt entirely frustrated, discover'd to them by what means he had got them off; and after they had search'd him, found nothing, and Lock'd and Chain'd him down again: He took up the Nail and unlock'd the Padlock before their Faces; they were struck with the greatest Amazement as having never heard, or beheld the like before. He was then Hand-Cuff'd, and more effectually Chain'd.

The next day, the Reverend Mr. *Purney Ordinary* of the Place came from the Country to visit him, and complain'd of the sad Disposition he found him in, as Meditating on nothing, but Means to Escape, and declining the great Duty incumbent upon him to prepare for his approaching Change. He began to Relent, and said, that since his last Effort had prov'd not Successful, he would entertain no more Thoughts of that Nature, but entirely Dispose, and Resign himself to the Mercy of Almighty God, of whom he hop'd still to find forgiveness of his manifold Offences.

He said, that *Edgworth Bess* and himself kept a little Brandy-shop together in *Lewkenbor's-Lane*, and once sav'd about Thirty Pounds; but having such an uni-

versal Acquaintance amongst Theives, he had frequent calls to go *Abroad*, and soon quitted that Business, and his Shop.

On *Friday* the 2d, of *October* his old Confederate *Joseph Blake* alias *Blewskin*, was apprehended and taken at a House in *St. Giles's* Parish by *Jonathan Wild*, and by Justice *Blackerby* committed to *Newgate*. *William Field* who was at his Liberty, appearing and making Oath, that *Blewskin* together with *John Sheppard* and himself, committed the Burglary and Felony in Mr. *Kneebone's* House, for which *Sheppard* was Condemn'd.

The Sessions commencing at the *Old-Bailey* on *Wednesday* the 14th of *October* following, an Indictment was found against *Blewskin* for the same, and he was brought down from *Newgate* to the *Old-Bailey* to be Arraign'd in order to his Tryal; and being in the Yard within the Gate before the Court: Mr. *Wild* being there Drinking a glass of Wine with him, he said to Mr. *Wild*, *You may put in a word for me, as well as for another Person?* To which Mr. *Wild* reply'd, *I cannot do it, You are certainly a dead Man, and will be tuck'd up very speedily*, or words to that effect: Whereupon *Blewskin* on a sudden seiz'd Mr. *Wild* by the Neck, and with a little Clasp Knife he was provided with he cut his Throat in a very dangerous Manner; and had it not been for a *Muslin* Stock twisted in several Plaits round his Neck, he had in all likelihood succeeded in his barbarous Design before *Ballard* the Turnkey, who was at Hand, could have time to lay hold of him; the Villain triumph'd afterwards in what he had done, Swearing many bloody Oaths, that if he had murder'd him, he should have died with Satisfaction, and that his Intention was to have cut off his Head, and thrown it into the Sessions House-Yard among the Rab-

ble, and Curs'd both his Hand and the Knife for not Executing it Effectually.

Mr. *Wild* instantly had the Assistance of three able Surgeons, viz. Mr. *Dobbins*, Mr. *Marten* and Mr. *Coletheart*, who sew'd up the Wound, and order'd him to his Bed, and he has continu'd ever since, but in a doubtful State of Recovery.

The Felons on the Common Side of *Newgate*, also animated by *Sheppard's* Example, the Night before they were to be Shipt for Transportation, had cut several Iron Bars assunder, and some of them had saw'd off their Fetters, the rest Huzzaing, and making Noises, under pretence of being Joyful that they were to be remov'd on the Morrow, to prevent the Workmen being heard; and in two Hours time more, if their Design had not been discover'd, near One Hundred Villains had been let loose into the World, to have committed new Depredations; nothing was wanted here but *Sheppard's* great Judgment, who was by himself in the strong Room, call'd the *Castle*, meditating his own Deliverance, which he perfected in the manner following.

On *Thursday* the 15th of this Instant *October*, at between One and Two in the Afternoon, *William Austin*, an Assistant to the Keepers, a Man reputed to be a very diligent, and faithful Servant, went to *Sheppard* in the strong Room, call'd the *Castle*, with his Necessaries, as was his Custom every Day. There went along with him Captain *Geary*, the Keeper of *New Prison*, Mr. *Gough*, belonging to the *Gate-house* in *Westminster*, and two other Gentlemen, who had the Curiosity to see the Prisoner; *Austin* very strictly examined his Fetters, and his Hand-Cuffs, and found them very safe; he eat his Dinner and talk'd with his usual Gayety to the Company: They took

leave of him and wish'd him a good Evening. The Court being sitting at the *Old-Bailey*, the Keepers and most of their Servants were attending there with their Prisoners: And *Sheppard* was told that if he wanted any thing more, then was his Time, because they could not come to him till the next Morning: He thank'd them for their Kindness, and desir'd them to be *as early as possible*.

The same Night, soon after 12 of the Clock Mr. *Bird*, who keeps a Turner's shop adjoining to *Newgate*, was disturb'd by the Watchman, who found his Street Door open, and call'd up the Family, and they concluding the Accident was owing to the Carelessness of some in the House, shut their Doors, and went to Bed again.

The next Morning *Friday*, at about eight Mr. *Austin* went up as usual to wait on *Sheppard*, and having unlock'd and unbolted the double Doors of the Castle, he beheld almost a Cart-load of Bricks and Rubbish about the Room, and his Prisoner gone: The Man ready to sink, came trembling down again, and was scarce able to Acquaint the People in the *Lodge* with what had happen'd.

The whole Posse of the Prison ran up, and stood like Men depriv'd of their Senses: Their surprize being over, they were in hopes that he might not have yet entirely made his Escape, and got their Keys to open all the strong Rooms adjacent to the *Castle*, in order to Trace him, when to their farther Amazement, they found the Doors ready open'd to their Hands; and the strong Locks, Screws and Bolts broken in pieces, and scatter'd about the Jayl. Six great Doors (one whereof having not been open'd for seven Years past) were forc'd, and it appear'd that he had Descended from the Leads of *Newgate* by a Blanket (which he fasten'd to the Wall by an Iron Spike

he had taken from the Hatch of the *Chapel*) on the House of Mr. *Bird*; and the Door on the Leads having been left open, it is very reasonable to conclude he past directly to the Street Door down the Stairs; Mr. *Bird* and his Wife hearing an odd sort of a Noise on the Stairs as they lay in their Bed, a short time before the Watchman alarm'd the Family.

Infinite Numbers of Citizens came to *Newgate* to behold *Sheppard's* Workmanship, and Mr. *Pitt* and his Officers very readily Conducted them up Stairs, that the World might be convinc'd there was not the least room to suspect, either a Negligence, or Connivance in the Servants. Every one express'd the greatest Surprize that has been known, and declar'd themselves satisfy'd with the Measures they had taken for the Security of their Prisoner.

One of the Sheriffs came in Person, and went up to the *Castle* to be satisfy'd of the Situation of the Place, &c. Attended by several of the City Officers.

The Court being sat at the *Sessions-House*, the Keepers were sent for and Examin'd, and the Magistrates were in great Consternation, that so horrid a Wretch had escap'd their Justice. It being intended that he should have been brought down to the Court the last Day of the *Sessions*, and order'd for Execution in Two or Three Days after; if it appear'd that he was the Person Condemn'd for the breaking Mr. *Kneebone's* House, and included in the Warrant for Execution, &c.

Many of the Methods by which this miraculous Escape was effected, remain as yet a Secret; there are some indeed too Evident; the most reasonable Conjecture that has hitherto been made, is, that the first Act was his twisting and breaking assunder by the strength of his

Hands a small Iron Chain, which together with a great Horse Padlock, (as went from the heavy Fetters about his Legs to the Staples) confin'd him to the Floor, and with a Nail open'd the Padlock and set himself at Liberty about the Room: A large flat Iron Bar appears to have been taken out of the Chimney, with the Assistance whereof 'tis plain he broke thro' a Wall of many Foot in Thickness, and made his way from the *Castle* into another strong Room Contiguous, the Door of it not having been open'd since several of the *Preston* Prisoners were Confin'd there about seven Years ago: Three Screws are visibly taken off of the Lock, and the Doors as strong as Art could make them, forc'd open: The Locks and Bolts, either wrench'd or Broke, and the Cases and other Irons made for their Security cut assunder: An Iron Spike broke off from the Hatch in the *Chapel*, which he fix'd in the Wall and fasten'd his Blanket to it, to drop on the Leads of Mr. *Bird's* House; his Stockings were found on the Leads of *Newgate*; 'tis question'd whether sixty Pounds will repair the Damage done to the Jayl.

It will perhaps be inquir'd how all this could be perform'd without his being heard by the Prisoners or the Keepers; 'tis well known that the Place of his Confinement is in the upper part of the Prison, none of the other Felons being kept any where near him; and 'tis suppos'd that if any had heard him at Work, they would rather have facilitated, than frustrated his Endeavours. In the Course of his Breaches he pass'd by a Door on his Left belonging to the *Common-Side* Felons, who have since Curs'd him heartily for his not giving them an opportunity to kiss his Hand, and lending them a favourable lift when his Hand was in; but that was not a Work proper for Mr. *Sheppard* to do in his then Circumstances.

His Fetters are not to be found any where about the Jail, from whence 'tis concluded he has either thrown them down some Chimney, or carried them off on his Legs; the latter seems to be Impracticable, and would still render his Escaping in such manner the more astonishing; and the only Answer that is given to the whole, at *Newgate* is, *That the Devil came in Person and assisted him.*

He undoubtedly perform'd most of these Wonders in the darkest part of the Night, and without the least Glimpse of a Candle; In a word, he has actually done with his own Hands in a few Hours, what several of the most skilful Artists allow, could not have been acted by a number of Persons furnish'd with proper Implements, and all other Advantages in a full Day.

Never was there any thing better Tim'd, the Keepers and all their Assistants being obliged to a strict Attendance on the Sessions at the *Old-Bailey*, which held for about a Week; and *Blewskin* having confin'd *Jonathan Wild* to his Chamber, a more favourable opportunity could not have presented for Mr. *Sheppard's* Purposes.

The Jailors suffer'd much by the Opinion the ignorant Part of the People entertain'd of the Matter, and nothing would satisfie some, but that they not only Coniv'd at, but even assisted him in breaking their own Walls and Fences, and that for this Reason too, *viz.* That he should be at Liberty to instruct and train up others in his Method of House-Breaking; and replenish the Town with a new set of Rogues, to supply the Places of those Transported beyond Sea.

This is indeed a fine way of Judging, the well-known Characters of Mr. *Pitt*, and his Deputies, are sufficient to wipe of such ridiculous Imputations; and 'tis a most lamentable Truth, that they have oftentimes had in their

Charge Villains of the deepest Die; Persons of Quality and great Worth, for whom no Entreaties, no Sums how large soever have been able to interfere between the doleful Prison, and the fatal Tree.

The Officers have done their duty, they are but Men, and have had to deal with a Creature something more than Man, a *Protæus*, Supernatural. Words cannot describe him, his Actions and Workmanship which are too visible, best testifie him.

On *Saturday* the 17th, *Joseph Blake*, alias *Blewskin*, came upon his Tryal at the *Old-Bayley*: *Field* gave the same Evidence against him, as he had formerly done against *Sheppard*; and the Prisoner making but a trifling Defence, the Jury found him Guilty of Burglary and Felony. The Criminal when the Verdict was brought in, made his Obeysances to the Court, *and thank'd them for their Kindness*.

It will be necessary that we now return to the Behaviour of Mr. *Sheppard*, some few Days before his last Flight.

Mr. *Figg* the famous Prize-Fighter comeing to see him, in *NEWGATE*, there past some pleasant Raillery between them; and after Mr. *Figg* was gone, *Sheppard* declared he had a Mind to send him a formal Challenge to Fight him at all the Weapons in the strong Room; and that let the Consequence be what it would, he should call at Mr. *Figg's* House in his way to Execution, and drink a merry Glass with him by way of Reconciliation.

A young Woman, an Acquaintance of his Mother, who wash'd his Linnen and brought him Necessaries, having in an Affray, got her Eyes beaten Black and Blue; says *Sheppard* to her, *How long hast thou been Married?* Replies the Wench, *I wonder you can ask me such a Ques-*

tion, when you so well know the Contrary: Nay, says Sheppard again, Sarah, don't deny it, for you have gotten your CERTIFICATE in your Face.

Mr. Ireton a Bailiff in *Drury-Lane* having pursued *Sheppard* after his Escape from the Condemn'd-Hold with uncommon Diligence; (for the safety of that Neighbourhood which was the chief Scene of his Villainies) *Sheppard* when Re-taken, declared, he would be even with him for it, and if ever he procur'd his Liberty again, *he would give all his Prisoners an ACT OF GRACE.*

A Gentleman in a jocose way ask'd him to come and take a Dinner with him, *Sheppard* reply'd, *he accepted of the Invitation, and perhaps might take an opportunity to wait on him;* and there is great Reason to believe he has been as good as his Word.

He would complain of his Nights, as saying, *It was dark with him from Five in the Evening, till Seven in the Morning;* and being not permitted to have either a Bed or Candle, his Circumstances were dismal; and that he never slept but had some confus'd doses; he said he consider'd all this with the Temper of a Philosopher.

Neither his sad Circumstances, nor the solemn Exhortations of the several Divines who visited him, were able to divert him from this ludicrous way of Expression; he said, *They were all Ginger-Bread Fellows,* and came rather out of Curiosity, than charity; and to form *Papers* and *Ballads* out of his Behaviour.

A Welch Clergyman who came pretty often, request-ed him in a particular Manner to retrain Drinking; (tho' indeed there was no necessity for that Caution) *Sheppard* says, Doctor, *You set an Example and I'll follow;* this was a smart Satyr and Repartee upon the *Parson,* some Circumstances consider'd.

When he was visited in the *Castle* by the Reverend Mr. *Wagstaff*, he put on the Face only of a Preparation for his End, as appear'd by his frequent Attempts made upon his Escape, and when he has been press'd to Discover those who put him upon Means of Escaping, and furnish'd him with Implements, he would passionately, and with a Motion of striking, say, *ask me no such Questions, one File's worth all the Bibles in the World.*

When ask'd if he had not put off all Thoughts of an Escape and Entertain'd none but those of Death, would Answer by way of Question, not directly, whether they thought it possible, or probable for him to Effect his Release, when Manacled in the manner he was. When mov'd to improve the few Minutes that seem'd to remain of his Life; he did indeed listen to, but not regard the Design and Purport of his Admonition, breaking in with something New of his own, either with respect to his former Accomplices, or Actions, and all too with Pleasure and Gayety of Expression.

When in *Chapel*, he would seemingly make his Responses with Devotion; but when (as an Auditor of the Sermon) he would either Laugh, or force Expressions! of Contempt, either of the Preacher, or of his Discourse.

In fine, he behav'd so, in Word, and Action, (since re-taken) that demonstrated to the World, that his Escape was the utmost Employ of his Thoughts, whatever Face of Penitence he put on when visited by the Curious.

AN ACCOUNT of SHEPPARD'S Adventures of five Hours immediately after his Escape from *Newgate*, in a Letter to his Friend

DEAR FRIEND!

OVER a Bottle of Claret you'll give me leave to declare it, that I've fairly put the Vowels upon the good Folks at *Newgate*, i.o.u. When I'm able, I may, or may not discharge my Fees, 'tis a Fee-simple, for a Man in my Condition to acknowledge; and tho' I'm safe out of *Newgate*, I must yet have, or at least, affect, a new Gate by *Limping*, or turning my Toes in by making a right Hand of my Feet. Not to be long, for I hate Prolixity in all Business: In short, after Filing, Defileing, Sawing, when no Body Saw. Climbing (*this Clime in*) it prov'd a good Turner of my Affairs, thro' the House of a Turner. Being quite past, and safe from *Estate* on Person or Chattels, and safe in the Street, I thought Thanks due to him who cou'd Deliver hence; and immediately (for you must know I'm a Catholick) to give Thanks for my Deliverance, I step't amongst the Grey-Fryers to come and joyn with me, in saying a Pater-Noster, or so, at Amen-Corner. The Fryers being Fat, began to Broil, and soon after Boild up into a Passion to be disturb'd at that time of Night. But being got Loose and having no Time to Lose, I gave them good Words, and so the Business was done. From thence I soon slip'd through *Ludgate*, but was damnably fearful of an Old Bailey always lurking thereabout, who might have brought me to the Fleet for being too Nimble, besides, I was wonderfully apprehensive of receiving some unwelcome Huggings from the W . . . n there; therefore with a Step and a Stride I soon got over Fleet-ditch, and (as in Justice I ought) I prais'd the Bridge I got over. Being a Bachelor, and not being capable

to manage a Bridewell you know. I had no Business near St. Bride's, so kept the right hand side, designing to Pop into the Alley as usual; but fearing to go thro' there, and harp too much on the same String, it gave an Allay to my Intention, and on I went to Shoe-lane end, but there meeting with a Bully Hack of the Town, he wou'd have shov'd me down, which my Spirit resenting, tho' a brawny Dog, I soon Coller'd him, fell Souse at him, then with his own Cane I strapp'd till he was force to Buckle too, and hold his Tongue, in so much he durst not say his Soul was his own, and was glad to pack of at Last, and turn his Heels upon me: I was glad he was gone you may be sure, and dextrously made a Hand of my Feet under the Leg-Tavern; but the very Thoughts of Fetter-Lane call'd to mind some Passages, which made me avoid the Passage at the end of it, (next to the coffee-House you know) so I soon whip'd over the way, yet going along, two wooden Logger-heads at St. Dunstan's, made just then a damn'd Noise about their Quarters, but the sight of me made perfectly Hush in a Minute; now fearing to goe by Chance-a-wry-Lane, as being upon the Watch my self, and not to be debarr'd at Temple-Bar; I stole up Bell-Yard, but narrowly escap'd being Clapper-claw'd by two Fellows I did not like in the Alley, so was forc'd to goe round with a design to Sheer-off into Sheer-Lane, but the Trumpet sounding at that very time, alarm'd me so, I was forc'd to Grope my way back through Hemlock Court, and take my Passage by Ship-Yard without the Bar again; but there meeting with one of our trusty Friends, (all Ceremonies a-part), he told me under the Rose I must expect no Mercy in St. Clement's Parish, for the Butchers there on the Back on't would Face me, and with their Cleavers soon bring me down on my marrow Bones; you may believe I soon hasten'd thence, but by this time being Fainty and nigh Spent, I put

forward, and seeing a Light near the Savoy-Gate, I was resolv'd not to make Light of the Opportunity, but call'd for a hearty Dram of Luther and Calvin, that is, Mum and Geneva mix'd; but having Fasted so long before, it soon got into my Noddle, and e're I had gone twenty steps, it had so intirely Stranded my Reason, that by the time I came to Half-Moon-Street end, it gave a New-Exchange to my Senses, and made me quite Lunatic.

However, after a little Rest, I stole down George-Passage into Oaf-Alley in York-Buildings, and thence (tho' a vile Man) into Villiers-Street, and so into the Strand again, where having gone a little way, Hefford's-Harp at the Sign of the Irish-Harp, put me a-Jumping and Dancing to that degree, that I could not forbear making a Somerset or two before Northumberland-House. I thought once of taking the Windsor Coach for my self John Sheppard, by the Name of Crook--, but fearing to be Hook'd in before my Journey's End, I stept into Hedge-Lane, where two Harlots were up in the Boughs (it seems) Branching out their Respects to one another, through their Windows, and People beginning to gather thereabout, I ran Pelmel to Piccadilly, where meeting, by meer Chance a Baker's Cart going to Turnham-Green, I being not Mealy Mouth'd, nor the Man being Crusty, I wheel'd out of Town.

I did call at Hammersmith, having no occasion directly. I shall stay two or three Days in that Neighbourhood, so, if you direct a Letter for Mr. Sligh Bolt, to be left with Mrs. Tabitha Skymmington at Cheesewick, its Safety will Bear Water by any Boat, and come Current, with the Tyde to, Dear Bob

Yours from the Top

of Newgate to the Bottom

J. SHEPPARD.

P.S.—If you see *Blewskin*, tell him I am well, and hope he receiv'd my last . . . I wou'd write by the *Post* if I durst, but it wou'd be, certainly *Post-pon'd* if I did, and it would be *stranger* too, to trust a Line by a *Stranger*, who might *Palm* upon us both and never Deliver it to *Hand*.

I send this by a *Waterman*, (I dare trust) who is very Merry upon me, and says he wou'd not be in my *Jacket*.
Saturday, Octob. 17, 1724.

We shall conclude with what had been often observ'd by many Persons to *Sheppard*; *viz.* That it was very Imprudent in him to take Shelter in the City, or the adjacent Parts of it, after his Escape from the Condemn'd Hold; and withal to commit a *Capital Offence*, almost within Sight of *Newgate*, when his Life and all was in such Danger. His Reply was general, *viz.* That it was his Fate: But being ask'd a particular Reason for his not taking a longer Rout than the City, and the Neighbouring parts; pleaded Poverty as his Excuse for Confinement within those Limits; at the same time urging, that had he been Master at that time of five Pounds, *England* should not have been the Place of his Residence, having a good Trade in his Hands to live in any populated Part of the World.

FINIS

A
NARRATIVE

Of all the
Robberies, Escapes, &c.

OF
JOHN SHEPPARD:

Giving an Exact Description of the manner of his wonderful Escape from the *C A S T L E* in *Newgate*, and of the Methods he took afterward for his Security.

Written by himself during his Confinement in the Middle Stone-Room, after his being retaken in Drury-Lane.

To which is Prefix'd,
A true Representation of his Escape from the *Condemn'd Hold*, curiously engraven on a Copper Plate.

The whole Publish'd at the particular Request of the Prisoner.

L O N D O N :

*Printed and Sold by John Applebee, a little below Bride-well-Bridge, in Black-Fryers, 1724.
(Price Six Pence.)*

A NARRATIVE Of all the Robberies, Escapes, &c.
OF John Sheppard, was published on November 17th,
1724, the day after Sheppard's execution, as an 8vo pamphlet of 31 pages. In addition to the 'true Representation of his Escape . . . curiously engraven on a Copper Plate,' the British Museum copy contains a crude folding print of 'JACK SHEPPARD, Drawn from the Life,' which shows him chained to the floor of the Castle of Newgate, and includes 'The hole he made in ye Chimney when he got loose.' There are other prints in the British Museum showing the details of his escape, and a portrait by Sir James Thornhill in the London Museum. Immediately before his execution Sheppard is said to have handed a paper, purporting to be the original of this pamphlet, to Mr. Applebee: but the pamphlet itself must have been already in the press. At this time Defoe was in close touch with Applebee. He was a regular contributor to the 'Original Weekly Journal,' and it is almost certain that as Applebee's representative he obtained the material for this pamphlet directly from Sheppard in Newgate: though the writing is undoubtedly by Defoe. The 'Narrative' is now exceedingly scarce: the present edition is a close reprint of the copy in the British Museum (518. f. 38).

JOHN SHEPARD'S
NARRATIVE
OF HIS
LIFE *and* ACTIONS, &c.

AS my unhappy Life and Actions have afforded Matter of much Amusement to the World; and various Pamphlets, Papers, and Pictures relating thereunto are gone abroad, most or all of them misrepresenting my Affairs; 'tis necessary that I should say something for my self, and set certain intricate Matters in a true Light; every Subject, how unfortunate or unworthy soever, having the Liberty of publishing his Case. And it will be no small Satisfaction to me to think that I have thoroughly purg'd my Conscience before I leave the World, and made Reparation to the many Persons Injur'd by me, as far as is in my poor Power.

If my Birth, Parentage, or Education will prove of Service or Satisfaction to Mankind, I was born in *Stepney* Parish, the Year *Queen Anne* came to the Crown; my Father a *Carpenter* by Trade, and an honest industrious Man by Character, and my Mother bore and deserved the same. She being left a Widow in the early Part of my Life, continued the Business, and kept my self, together with another unfortunate Son, and a Daughter, at Mr. *Garrett's* School, near Great St. *Hellen's* in *Bishopgate* Parish, till Mr. *Kneebone* a *Woollen-Draper* in the *Strand*, an Acquaintance, regarding the slender Circumstances of our Family, took me under his Care, and improv'd me in my Writing and Accompts, himself setting me

Copies with his own Hand; and he being desirous to settle me to a Trade, and to make my Mother easy in that Respect, agreed with Mr. *Owen Wood*, a Carpenter in *Drury-Lane*, to take me Apprentice for Seven Years, upon Condition that Mr. *Kneebone* should procure Mr. *Wood* to be employ'd in performing the Carpenter's Work, &c. at a House at *Hampstead*, which he did accordingly, and upon that and no other Consideration was I bound to Mr. *Wood*.

We went on together for about six Years there happening in that Time what is too common with most Families in low Life, as frequent Quarrels and Bickerings. I am far from presuming to say that I was one of the best of Servants, but I believe if less Liberty had been allow'd me then, I should scarce have had so much Sorrow and Confinement after. My Master and Mistress with their Children were strict Observers of the Sabbath, but 'tis too well known in the Neighbourhood that I had too great a Loose given to my evil Inclinations, and spent the Lord's Day as I thought convenient. It has been said in Print that I did beat and bruise my Master Mr. *Wood* in a most barbarous and shameful manner at Mr. *Britt's*, the *Sun* Ale-House at *Islington*, and that I damn'd my Mistress's Blood, and beat her to the Ground, &c. These Stories have been greatly improved to my Disadvantage. Mr. *Wood* cannot but remember how hard I wrought for him that Day at *Islington*, what Refreshment was offer'd to my Fellow-Servant and my self; the Cause of that unhappy Quarrel is still fresh in my Memory: And as for that of my Mistress, when *Elizabeth Lyon* and her Husband, a Soldier, were quarrelling together in Mr. *Wood's* Yard, I bid them be gone, and threw a small Lath at *Lyon*, which might fall on my Mistress, but she re-

ceived no Harm as I know of, and if she did, I am sorry for it.

After all I may justly lay the Blame of my Temporal and (without God's great Mercies) my Eternal Ruin on *Joseph Hind*, a *Button-mould Maker*, who formerly kept the *Black Lyon Ale-House* in *Drury-Lane*; the frequenting of this wicked House brought me acquainted with *Elizabeth Lyon*, and with a Train of Vices, as before I was altogether a Stranger to. *Hind* is now a lamentable Instance of God's divine Vengeance, he being a wretched Object about the Streets; and I am still far more miserable than him.

It has been said in the *History of my Life*, that the first Robbery I ever committed was in the House of Mr. *Bains*, a *Piece-Broker* in *White-Horse Yard*; to my Sorrow and Shame I must acknowledge my Guilt of a Felony before that, which was my stealing two silver Spoons from the *Rummer Tavern* at *Charing-Cross*, when I was doing a Jobb there for my Master: for which I ask Pardon of God, and the Persons who were wrongfully charg'd and injur'd by that my Crime.

Unhappy Wretch! I was now commenced Thief, and soon after House-breaker; growing gradually wicked, 'twas about the latter End of *July* 1723, that I was sent by my Master to do a Jobb at the House of Mr. *Bains* aforesaid, I there stole a Roll of Fustian containing 24 Yards, from amongst many others, and Mr. *Bains* not missing it, had consequently no Suspicion. I offer'd it to Sale among the young Lads in our Neighbourhood at 12*d.* per Yard, but meeting with no Purchasers I concealed the Fustian in my Trunk.

On the 1st of *August* following, I again wrought in Mr. *Bains's* Shop, and that Night at about 12 of the Clock

I came and took up the wooden Bars over the Cellar-window, so enter'd and came up into the House, and took away Goods to the value of fourteen Pounds, besides seven Pounds in money out of the *Till*, then nail'd down the Bars again and went off. The next Day I came to the House to finish the Shutters for the Shop, when Mr. *Bains* and his Wife were in great trouble for their Loss, saying to me they suspected a Woman their Lodger had let the Rogues in, for that they were assured the House had not been broken; the poor People little dreaming they were telling their Story to the Thief, I condoling with them, and pretending great Sorrow for their Misfortune. Not long afterwards my Fellow-prentice *Thomas* acquainted Mr. *Wood* that he had observed a quantity of Fustian in my Trunk. My Master and I had broke measures, and I being absent from home and hearing *Thomas* had tattled, in the night-time I broke through a Neighbour's House and into my Master's, and so carried off the Fustian, to prevent the consequence of a Discovery. Mr. *Wood* rightly concluding I had stoln it from Mr. *Bains*, sent him word of what had happen'd, who upon overlooking his Goods soon found his Loss, and threaten'd to prosecute me for the Robbery. I thought it was adviseable to meet the danger; and therefore went to Mr. *Bains*, bullied and menac'd him, and bid him be careful how he sullied my Reputation, lest he might be brought to repent of it. But this was not sufficient to avert the danger. Mr. *Bains* resolving to proceed upon the Circumstances he was already furnished with; I thought of another Expedient, and acknowledg'd that I had a piece of Fustian which my Mother had bought for me in *Spittle-Fields* of a Weaver; and she, poor Woman, willing to screen her wicked Son, con-

firm'd the Story, and was a whole Day together with Mr. *Bains* in *Spittle-Fields* to find out the pretended Weaver. In the end, I was forc'd to send back about 19 Yards of the Fustian to Mr. *Bains*, and then the Storm blew over. I related all these Particulars to Mr. *Bains* when he came to me in the *Castle* Room, as well to wipe off the Suspicion from the poor innocent Woman, Mr. *Bains's* Lodger, as for his own Satisfaction.

I abruptly quitted Mr. *Wood's* Service almost a Year before the expiration of my Apprenticeship, and went to *Fulham*, and there wrought as a Journey-man to a Master Carpenter, telling the Man that I had served out my Apprenticeship in *Smithfield*. *Elizabeth Lyon* cohabiting with me as my Wife, I kept her in a Lodging at *Parson's-Green*; but Mr. *Wood's* Brother being an Inhabitant in the Town discover'd me, and my Master with Justice *Newton's* Warrant brought me to *London*, and confin'd me in *St. Clement's* Round-house all Night: the next Day I was carried to *Guild-Hall* to have gone before the Chamberlain, but he being gone, I agreed with Mr. *Wood*, and making matters easy got clear of him, and then fell to robbing almost every one that stood in my way. The Robbery at Mr. *Charles's* House in *May-Fair* I have confess'd in a particular manner to Mr. *Wagstaffe*, and to many others.

The Robberies of Mr. *Bains*, Mr. *Barton*, and Mr. *Kneebone*, together with the Robbery of Mr. *Pargiter* and two others on the *Hampstead* Road, along with *Joseph Blake*, alias *Blueskin*, I did amply confess before Justice *Blackerby*, Mr. *Bains* and Mr. *Kneebone* being present, and did make all the Reparation that was in my power, by telling them where the Goods were sold, part whereof has been recovered by those means to the Owners.

I declare upon the word of a dying Man, that *Will. Field* was not concerned with *Blueskin* and my self in the breaking and robbing of Mr. *Kneebone's* House, altho' he has sworn the same at our respective Tryals; and I have been inform'd that by certain Circumstances which *Field* swore to, Mr. *Kneebone* himself is of opinion that he was not concerned in the Fact: But he has done the work for his *Master*, who in the end no doubt will reward him, as he has done all his other Servants. I wish *Field* may repent and amend his wicked Life, for a greater Villain there is not breathing. *Blueskin* and my self, after we had robb'd Mr. *Kneebone's* House, lodg'd the Goods at my Warehouse, a little Stable at *Westminster Horse-Ferry*, which I had hired for such Purposes. I was so cautious of suffering any one to be acquainted with it, that even *Elizabeth Lyon* was out of the Secret; but hearing of a *Lock or Fence* in *Bishopgate-Street* to dispose of the Cloth to, *Blueskin* carried the Pack, and I follow'd to guard him, and met the *Chap* at an Alehouse; a small Quantity we got off at a very low Price, which was always not ours, but is the constant Fate of all other Robbers; for I declare that when Goods (the intrinsic Value whereof has been 50 *l.*) have been in my hands, I have never made more than ten Pounds of them clear money; such a Discount and Disadvantage attends always the sale of such unlawful Acquirements. *Field* lodging with *Blueskin's* Mother in *Rosemary-Lane*, we all became acquainted, and being all of a piece made no Secret of Mr. *Kneebone's* Robbery; we told him the manner of it, the Booty, &c. and withal carried him down to the Warehouse at *Westminster*, he pretending to buy the Goods. In a Day or two after, to the great Surprize of *Blueskin* and my self, we found the Warehouse broke open, the Cloth gone, and only a

Wrapper or two of no value left; we concluded, as it appeared after, that *Field* had plaid at *Rob-Thief* with us, for he produc'd some of Mr. *Kneebone's* Cloth at my Tryal, of which he became possess'd by no other means than those I have related. I must add this to what relates to Mr. *Kneebone's* Robbery, that I was near a Fortnight, by Intervals, in cutting the two Oaken Bars that went over the back part of his House in *Little Drury-Lane*. I heartily ask his Pardon for injuring him my kind Patron and Benefactor in that manner, and desire his Prayers to God for the forgiveness of that as of all my other enormous Crimes.

I have been at times confin'd in all the Round-houses belonging to the respective Parishes within the Liberty of *Westminster*; *Elizabeth Lyon* has been a Prisoner in many of them also: I have sometimes procur'd her Liberty, and she at others has done her utmost to obtain mine, and at other times she has again betray'd me into the hands of Justice. When I was formerly in St. *Anne's* Round-house, she brought me the Spike of an Halbert, with the Help whereof I did break open the same, but was discover'd before I could get off, and was put into the Dungeon of the Place fetter'd and manacled; and that was the first Time that I had any Irons put upon me. I in Return rescu'd her from St. *Giles's* Round-house soon after; but the Manner of my own Escape from St. *Giles's* Round-House may be worthy of Notice. Having in Confederacy with my Brother *Thomas* a Seafaring Person, and *Elizabeth Lyon* committed several Robberies about *Clare Market*, and *Thomas* being in *Newgate* for them, impeach'd me and *Lyon*; and the Prosecutors being in close Pursuit of us, I kept up as much as possible; 'till being one Day at the *Queen's Head*

Ale-house in *King Street, Westminster*, an Acquaintance call'd *Sykes* (alias *Hell and Fury*) a Chairman desir'd me to go thence to an Ale-house at the *Seven Dials*, saying he knew two *Chubs* that we might make a Penny of at *Skettles*, we being good Players: I went with him; a third Person he soon procur'd, and said the fourth should not be long wanting, and truly he prov'd to be a Constable of *St. Giles's Parish*. In short, *Sykes* charg'd him with me, saying I stood impeach'd of several Robberies. Justice *Parry* sent me to *St. Giles's Round-house* for that Night, with Orders to the Constable to bring me before him again the next Morning for farther Examination. I had nothing but an old Razor in my Pocket, and was confin'd in the upper Part of the Place, being two Stories from the Ground; with my Razor I cut out the Stretcher of a Chair, and began to make a Breach in the Roof, laying the Feather-bed under it to prevent any Noise by the falling of the Rubbish on the Floor. It being about nine at Night, People were passing and repassing in the Street, and a Tile or Brick happening to fall, struck a Man on the Head, who rais'd the whole Place; the People calling aloud that the Prisoners were breaking out of the Round-house. I found there was no Time then to be lost, therefore made a bold Push thro' the Breach, throwing a whole Load of Bricks, Tiles, &c. upon the People in the Street; and before the Beadle and Assistance came up I had dropt into the Church-yard, and got over the lower End of the Wall, and came amidst the Crowd, who were all staring up, some crying, *there's his Head, there he goes behind the Chimney, &c.* I was well enough diverted with the Adventure, and then went off about my Business.

The Methods by which I escap'd from *New-Prison*, and the *Condemn'd Hold of Newgate*, have been printed in

so many Books and Papers, that it would be ridiculous to repeat them; only it must be remember'd that my Escaping from *New-Prison*, and carrying with me *Elizabeth Lyon* over the Wall of *Bridewell Yard*, was not so wonderful as has been reported, because Captain *Geary* and his Servants cannot but know, that by my opening the great Gate I got *Lyon* upon the Top of the Wall without the Help of a scaling Ladder, otherwise it must have been impracticable to have procur'd her Redemption. She indeed rewarded me as well for it, in betraying me to *Jonathan Wild* so soon after. I wish she may reform her Life: a more wicked, deceitful and lascivious Wretch there is not living in *England*. She has prov'd my Bane. God forgive her: I do; and die in Charity with all the rest of Mankind.

Blueskin has atton'd for his Offences. I am now following, being just on the Brink of Eternity, much unprepar'd to appear before the Face of an angry God. *Blueskin* had been a much older Offender than myself, having been guilty of numberless Robberies, and had formerly Convicted four of his Accomplices, who were put to Death. He was concern'd along with me in the three Robberies on the *Hampstead Road*, besides that of Mr. *Knee-bone*, and one other. Tho' he was an able-bodied Man and capable of any Crime, even Murder, he was never Master of a Courage or Conduct suitable to our Enterprizes; and I am of Opinion, that neither of us had so soon met our Fate, if he would have suffer'd himself to have been directed by me; he always wanting Resolution, when our Affairs requir'd it most. The last Summer, I hired two Horses for us at an Inn in *Piccadilly*, and being arm'd with Pistols, &c. we went upon *Enfield-Chace*, where a Coach pass'd us with two Footmen and four

young Ladies, who had with them their Gold Watches, Tweezer-Cases and other things of Value; I declar'd immediately for attacking them, but *Blueskin's* Courage dropt him, saying that he would first refresh his Horse and then follow, but he designedly delayed till we had quite lost the Coach and Hopes of the Booty. In short, he was a worthless Companion, a sorry Thief, and nothing but the cutting of *Jonathan Wild's* Throat could have made him considerable.

I have often lamented the scandalous Practice of Thief-catching, as it is call'd, and the publick Manner of offering Rewards for stoln Goods, in Defiance of two several Acts of Parliament; the Thief-Catchers living sumptuously, and keeping of public Offices of Intelligence: these who forfeit their Lives every Day they breathe, and deserve the Gallows as richly as any of the Thieves, send us as their Representatives to *Tyburn* once a Month: thus they hang by Proxy, while we do it fairly in Person.

I never corresponded with any of them. I was indeed twice at a Thief-Catcher's *Levee*, and must confess the Man treated me civilly; he complimented me on my Successes, said he heard that I had both an Hand and Head admirably well turn'd to *Business*, and that I and my Friends *should be always welcome to him*: But caring not for his Acquaintance, I never troubled him, nor had we any Dealings together.

As my last Escape from *Newgate* out of the strong Room call'd the *Castle*, has made a greater Noise in the World than any other Action of my Life, I shall relate every minute Circumstance thereof as far as I am able to remember: intending thereby to satisfie the Curious, and do Justice to the Innocent. After I had been made a

publick Spectacle off for many Days together, with my Legs chain'd together, loaded with heavy Irons, and stapled down to the Floor, I thought it was not altogether impracticable to escape, if I could but be furnished with proper Implements; but as every Person that came near me was carefully watch'd, there was no Possibility of any such Assistance; till one Day in the Absence of my Jailors, being looking about the Floor, I spy'd a small Nail within Reach, and with that, after a little Practice, I found the great Horse Padlock that went from the Chain to the Staple in the Floor might be unlock'd, which I did afterward at pleasure; and was frequently about the Room, and have several times slept on the Barracks, when the Keepers imagin'd I had not been out of my Chair. But being unable to pass up the Chimney, and void of Tools, I remain'd but where I was; till being detected in these Practices by the Keepers, who surpriz'd me one Day before I could fix myself to the Staple in the manner as they had left me, I show'd Mr. *Pitt*, Mr. *Rouse*, and Mr. *Parry* my Art, and before their Faces unlockt the Padlock with the Nail; and though People have made such an Outcry about it, there is scarce a *Smith* in *London* but what may easily do the same thing. However this call'd for a farther Security of me; and till now I had remain'd without Hand-Cuffs, and a jolly Pair was provided for me. Mr. *Kneebone* was present when they were put on: I with tears begg'd his Intercession to the Keepers to preserve me from those dreadful Manacles, telling him, my Heart was broken, and that I should be much more miserable than before. Mr. *Kneebone* could not refrain from shedding Tears, and did use his good Offices with the Keepers to keep me from them, but all to no purpose; on they went, though at the same time I despis'd them,

and well knew that with my Teeth only I could take them off at Pleasure: But this was to lull them into a firm Belief that they had effectually frustrated all Attempts to escape for the future. I was still far from despairing. The Turnkey and Mr. *Kneebone* had not been gone down Stairs an Hour, ere I made an Experiment, and got off my Hand-Cuffs, and before they visited me again, I put them on, and industriously rubb'd and fretted the Skin on my Wrists, making them very bloody, as thinking (if such a Thing was possible to be done) to move the Turnkeys to Compassion, but rather to confirm them in their Opinion; but though this had no Effect upon them, it wrought much upon the Spectators, and drew down from them not only much Pity, but quantities of *Silver* and *Copper*: But I wanted still a more useful *Metal*, a Crow, a Chissel, a File, and a Saw or two, those Weapons being more useful to me than all the Mines of *Mexico*; but there was no expecting any such Utensils in my Circumstances.

Wednesday the 14th of *October* the *Sessions* beginning, I found there was not a moment to be lost; and the Affair of *Jonathan Wild's* Throat, together with the Business at the *Old Baily*, having sufficiently engag'd the Attention of the Keepers, I thought then was the Time to push. *Thursday* the 15th at about two in the Afternoon *Austin* my old Attendant came to bring my Necessaries, and brought up four Persons, *viz.* the Keeper of *Clerkenwell-Bridewell*, the Clerk of *Westminster Gate-house*, and two others. *Austin*, as it was his usual Custom, examin'd the Irons and Hand-Cuffs, and found all safe and firm, and then left me; and he may remember that I ask'd him to come again to me the same Evening, but I neither expected or desired his Company; and happy was it for the

poor Man that he did not interfere, while I had the large Iron Bar in my Hand, though I once had a Design to have barricaded him, or any others from coming into the Room while I was at work; but then considering that such a Project would be useless, I let fall that Resolution.

As near as can be remember'd, just before three in the Afternoon I went to work, taking off first my Hand-Cuffs; next with main Strength I twisted a small Iron Link of the Chain between my Legs asunder; and the broken Pieces prov'd extream useful to me in my Design; the Fett-Locks I drew up to the Calves of my Legs, taking off before that my Stockings, and with my Garters made them firm to my Body, to prevent their Shackling. I then proceeded to make a Hole in the Chimney of the *Castle* about three Foot wide, and six Foot high from the Floor, and with the Help of the broken Links aforesaid wrench'd an Iron Bar out of the Chimney, of about two Feet and an half in length, and an Inch square: a most notable Implement. I immediately enter'd the *Red Room* directly over the *Castle*, where some of the *Preston Rebels* had been kept a long time ago; and as the Keepers say the Door had not been unlock'd for seven Years; but I intended not to be seven Years in opening it, though they had: I went to work upon the Nut of the Lock, and with little Difficulty got it off, and made the Door fly before me; in this Room I found a large Nail, which prov'd of great Use in my farther Progress. The Door of the Entry between the *Red Room* and the *Chapel* prov'd an hard Task, it being a laborious Piece of Work; for here I was forc'd to break away the Wall, and dislodge the Bolt which was fasten'd on the other Side. This occasion'd much Noise, and I was very fearful of being heard by the Master-Side Debtors. Being got to

the Chapel, I climb'd over the Iron Spikes, and with Ease broke one of them off for my further Purposes, and open'd the Door on the Inside. The Door going out of the Chapel to the Leads, I stripp'd the Nut from off the Lock, as I had done before from that of the *Red Room*, and then got into the Entry between the Chapel and the Leads; and came to another strong Door, which being fasten'd by a very strong Lock, there I had like to have stopt, and it being full dark, my Spirits began to fail me, as greatly doubting of succeeding; but cheering up, I wrought on with great Diligence, and in less than half an Hour, with the main Help of the Nail from the Red Room, and the Spike from the Chapel, wrench'd the Box off, and so made the Door my Humble Servant.

A little farther in my Passage another stout Door stood in my Way; and this was a Difficulty with a Witness; being guarded with more Bolts, Bars, and Locks than any I had hitherto met with: I had by this time great Encouragement, as hoping soon to be rewarded for all this Toil and Labour. The Clock at St. *Sepulchre's* was now going the eighth Hour, and this prov'd a very useful Hint to me soon after. I went first upon the Box and the Nut, but found it Labour in vain; and then proceeded to attack the Fillet of the Door; this succeeded beyond Expectation, for the Box of the Lock came off with it from the main Post. I found my Work was near finish'd, and that my Fate soon would be determined.

I was got to a Door opening in the lower Leads, which being only bolted on the Inside, I open'd it with ease, and then clambred from the top of it to the higher Leads, and went over the Wall. I saw the Streets were lighted, the Shops being still open, and therefore began to consider what was necessary to be further done, as knowing

that the smallest Accident would still spoil the whole Workmanship, and was doubtful on which of the Houses I should alight. I found I must go back for the Blanket which had been my Covering a-nights in the Castle, which I accordingly did, and endeavoured to fasten my Stockings and that together, to lessen my Descent, but wanted Necessaries so to do, and was therefore forc'd to make use of the Blanket alone. I fixt the same with the Chappel Spike into the Wall of *Newgate*, and dropt from it on the Turner's Leads, a House adjoining to the Prison; 'twas then about Nine of the Clock, and the Shops not yet shut in. It fortunately happen'd, that the Garret Door on the Leads was open. I stole softly down about two Pair of Stairs, and then heard Company talking in a Room; the Door open. My Irons gave a small Clink, which made a Woman cry, *Lord, what Noise is that?* A man reply'd, *Perhaps the Dog or Cat*; and so it went off. I return'd up to the Garret, and laid my self down, being terribly fatigu'd; and continu'd there for about two Hours, and then crept down once more to the Room where the Company were, and heard a Gentleman taking his Leave, being very importunate to be gone, saying he had disappointed Friends by not going Home sooner. In about three Quarters more the Gentleman took Leave, and went, being lighted down Stairs by the Maid, who, when she return'd, shut the Chamber-door; I then resolv'd at all Hazards to follow, and slipt down Stairs, but made a Stumble against a Chamber-door. I was instantly in the Entry and out at the Street Door, which I was so unmannerly as not to shut after me. I was once more, contrary to my own Expectation and that of all Mankind, a Freeman.

I pass'd directly by St. *Sepulchre's* Watch-house, bid-

ding them *Good-morrow*, it being after Twelve, and down *Snow-hill*, up *Holborn*, leaving *St. Andrew's Watch* on my left, and then again pass'd the Watch-house at *Holborn Bars*, and made down *Gray's Inn Lane* into the Fields, and at two in the Morning came to *Tottenham Court*, and there got into an old House in the Fields, where Cows had some time been kept, and laid me down to Rest, and slept well for three Hours. My Legs were swell'd and bruis'd intollerably, which gave me great Uneasiness; and having my Fetters still on, I dreaded the Approach of the Day, fearing then I should be discovered. I began to examine my Pockets, and found my self Master of between forty and fifty Shillings. I had no Friend in the World that I could send to, or trust with my Condition. About seven on *Friday* Morning it began raining, and continued so the whole Day, insomuch that not one Creature was to be seen in the Fields. I would freely have parted with my right Hand for a Hammer, a Chisel, and a Punch. I kept snug in my Retreat till the Evening, when after Dark I ventur'd into *Tottenham*, and got to a little blind Chandler's Shop, and there furnish'd myself with Cheese and Bread, Small-beer, and other Necessaries, hiding my Irons with a great Coat as much as possible. I ask'd the Woman for an Hammer, but there was none to be had; so I went very quietly back to my Dormitory, and rested pretty well that Night, and continued there all *Saturday*. At Night I went again to the Chandler's Shop and got Provisions, and slept till about six the next Day, which being *Sunday*, I began with a Stone to batter the *Basils* of the Fetters in order to beat them into a large Oval, and then to slip my Heels thorough. In the Afternoon the Master of the Shed, or House, came in, and seeing my Irons, asked me, *For*

God's sake, who are you? I told him, "an unfortunate young man, who had been sent to *Bridewell* about a Bastard-Child, as not being able to give Security to the Parish, and had made my Escape." The Man reply'd, *If that was the Case it was a small Fault indeed, for he had been guilty of the same things himself formerly*; and withal said, *However, he did not like my Looks, and cared not how soon I was gone.*

After he was gone, observing a poor-looking Man like a *Joiner*, I made up to him and repeated the same Story, assuring him that 20 s. should be at his Service, if he could furnish me with a Smith's Hammer, and a Punch. The Man prov'd a Shoe-maker by Trade, but willing to obtain the Reward, immediately borrow'd the Tools of a Black-Smith his Neighbour, and likewise gave me great Assistance, and before five that Evening I had entirely got rid of those troublesome Companions my Fetters, which I gave to the Fellow, besides his Twenty Shillings, if he thought fit to make use of them.

That Night I came to a Cellar at *Charing-Cross*, and refresh'd very comfortably with roast Veal, &c. where about a dozen People were all discoursing about *Sheppard*, and nothing else was talk'd on whilst I staid amongst them. I had tyed an Handkerchief about my Head, tore my woollen Cap in many places, as likewise my Coat and Stockings, and look'd exactly like what I designed to represent, a Beggar-Fellow.

The next Day I took shelter at an Ale-house of little or no Trade, in *Rupert-Street*, near *Piccadilly*. The Woman and I discours'd much about *Sheppard*. I assur'd her it was impossible for him to escape out of the Kingdom, and that the Keepers would have him again in a few Days. The Woman wish'd that a Curse might fall

on those who should betray him. I continued there till the Evening, when I stept towards the *Hay-market*, and mixt with a Crowd about two Ballad-Singers; the Subject being about *Sheppard*. And I remember the Company was very merry about the Matter.

On *Tuesday* I hired a Garret for my Lodging at a poor House in *Newport-Market*, and sent for a sober young Woman, who for a long Time past had been the real Mistress of my Affections, who came to me, and render'd all the Assistance she was capable of affording. I made her the Messenger to my Mother, who lodg'd in *Clare-street*. She likewise visited me in a Day or two after, begging on her bended Knees of me to make the best of my Way out of the Kingdom, which I faithfully promis'd; but I cannot say it was in my Intentions heartily so to do.

I was oftentimes in *Spittle-fields*, *Drury-lane*, *Lewkenor's-lane*, *Parker's-lane*, *St. Thomas-street*, &c. those having been the chief Scenes of my Rambles and Pleasures.

I had once form'd a Design to have open'd a Shop or two in *Monmouth-street* for some Necessaries, but let that drop, and came to a Resolution of breaking the House of the two Mr. *Rawlin's*, Brothers and *Pawn-brokers* in *Drury-lane*, which accordingly I put in Execution, and succeeded; they both hearing me rifling their Goods as they lay in Bed together in the next Room. And though there were none others to assist me, I pretended there was, by loudly giving out Directions for shooting the first Person through the Head that presum'd to stir: which effectually quieted them, while I carried off my Booty; with Part whereof on the fatal *Saturday* following, being the 31st of *October*, I made an extraordinary Appearance; and from a *Carpenter* and *Butcher* was now

transform'd into a perfect Gentleman; and in Company with my Sweetheart aforesaid, and another young Woman her Acquaintance, went into the City, and were very merry together at a publick House not far from the Place of my old Confinement. At four that same Afternoon we all pass'd under *Newgate* in a Hackney Coach, the Windows drawn up, and in the Evening I sent for my Mother to the *Sheers* Ale-house in *Maypole Alley*, near *Clare-Market*, and with her drank three Quarters of Brandy; and after leaving her I drank in one Place or other about that Neighbourhood all the Evening, till the evil Hour of Twelve, having been seen and known by many of my Acquaintance; all of them cautioning of me, and wondering at my Presumption to appear in that Manner. At length my Senses were quite overcome with the Quantities and Variety of Liquors I had all the Day been drinking of, which pav'd the Way for my Fate to meet me; and when apprehended, I do protest, I was altogether incapable of resisting, and scarce knew what they were doing to me, and had but two Second-hand Pistols scarce worth carrying about me.

A clear and ample Account have I now given of the most material Transactions of my Life, and do hope the same will prove a Warning to all young Men.

There nothing now remains. But I return my hearty Thanks to the Reverend Dr. *Bennet*, the Reverend Mr. *Purney*, the Reverend Mr. *Wagstaffe*, the Reverend Mr. *Hawkins*, the Reverend Mr. *Flood*, and the Reverend Mr. *Edwards*, for their Charitable Visits and Assistances to me; as also my Thanks to those worthy Gentlemen who so generously contributed towards my Support in Prison.

I hope none will be so cruel as to reflect on my poor distressed Mother, the unhappy Parent of two miserable Wretches, my self and Brother; the last gone to *America* for his Crimes, and my self going to the Grave for mine; the Weight of which Misfortune is sufficient surely to satisfy the Malice of her Enemies.

I beseech the infinite Divine Being of Beings to pardon my numberless and enormous Crimes, and to have Mercy on my poor departing Soul.

Middle-Stone-Room in
Newgate, Novem. 10.
1724.

John Sheppard.

POSTSCRIPT.

After I had Escap'd from the *Castle*, concluding that *Blueskin* would have certainly been decreed for Death, I did fully resolve and purpose to have gone and cut down the Gallows the Night before his Execution.

FINIS.

A
True Relation
OF THE
A P P A R I T I O N
OF ONE
Mrs. VEAL,
The next Day after Her DEATH:
TO ONE
Mrs. BARGRAVE
At Canterbury.
The 8th of *September*, 1705.

L O N D O N :
Printed for *B. Bragg*, at the *Black Raven* in *Pater-*
Noster-Row, 1706.

A TRUE RELATION OF THE APPARITION OF ONE MRS. VEAL, The next Day after Her DEATH: TO ONE MRS. BARGRAVE At Canterbury. The 8th of September, 1703. *This pamphlet, consisting of Title, Preface, and 9 pages of text, was first published on July 5th, 1706. It was reprinted in many editions of Drelincourt's 'Book of Death,' a work which is authoritatively recommended in the pamphlet; but the story that Defoe was commissioned to write it in order to help the sale of that book has been finally disproved by Lee in his 'Life and Newly Discovered Writings of Daniel Defoe.' The correct title of Drelincourt's book, which is misquoted by Defoe, is 'THE CHRISTIANS Defence AGAINST THE FEARS OF DEATH. With Seasonable DIRECTIONS How to prepare our Selves to Dye well. Written Originally in FRENCH, By the late Reverend Divine of the Protestant Church of PARIS CHAR. DRELINCOURT ... 1675.' The other books referred to by Mrs. Veal (page 236) are A PRACTICAL DISCOURSE CONCERNING DEATH. By WILLIAM SHERLOCK, D.D. Master of the TEMPLE [and later Dean of St. Paul's] ... 1689.' and 'THE HAPPY ASCETICK OR, THE BEST EXERCISE... To which is added a LETTER TO A Person of Quality, Concerning the Holy LIVES of the Primitive Christians. By ANTHONY HORNECK, D.D., Chaplain in Ordinary to Their MAJESTIES, and Preacher at the Savoy, 16..'*

The Mr. Norris whose 'Fine Coppy of Verses' Mrs. Veal wonderfully admired, was the Rev. John Norris, M.A. 'Rector of Bemerton near Sarum' and 'Fellow of All-Souls College in Oxford.' 'DAMON AND PYTHIAS: OR, Friendship in Perfection,' was published in his 'COLLECTION OF Miscellanies' in 1687; and the point of the 'Apparition's' reference to the poem is that the circumstances and intention of her visitation to Mrs. Bargrave are exactly paralleled in it. Damon and Pythias were 'Patterns of constant

love,' and when Damon expresses his fear that their friendship will be divided by Death, Pythias replies,

'No, banish all such fears, I then will be
Your friend and guardian Angel too.
And tho with more refined Society
I'll leave Elysium to converse with you.'

The story of Mrs. Veal was long regarded as one of Defoe's most brilliant and unscrupulous inventions, but G. A. Aitken (in the very interesting introduction to Volume XV of his edition of Defoe) has proved that although 'Whether the apparition really appeared must continue to depend ... upon ... Mrs. Bargrave's veracity,' yet 'for the rest ... nearly all the details are true ... and that, in fact Defoe ... simply told, very skilfully, a ghost story which was attracting notice at the time'; and some brilliant research has enabled him to show that the characters in the story really existed, and to identify most of them.

THE PREFACE

THIS relation is Matter of Fact, and attended with such Circumstances as may induce any Reasonable Man to believe it. It was sent by a Gentleman, a Justice of Peace at Maidstone, in Kent and a very Intelligent Person, to his Friend in London, as it is here Worded; which Discourse is attested by a very sober and understanding Gentlewoman, a Kinswoman of the said Gentlemen, who lives in Canterbury, within a few Doors of the House in which the within named Mrs. Bargrave lives; who believes his Kinswoman to be of so discerning a Spirit, as not to be put upon by any Fallacy, and who positively assured him, that the whole Matter, as it is here Related and laid down, is what is really True; and what She her self had in the same Words (as near as may be) from Mrs. Bargraves own Mouth, who she knows had no Reason to Invent and publish such a Story, nor any design to forge and tell a Lye, being a Woman of much Honesty and Virtue, and her whole Life a Course as it were of Piety. The use which we ought to make of it is, to consider, That there is a Life to come after this, and a Just God, who will retribute to every one according to the Deeds done in the Body; and therefore, to reflect upon our Past course of Life we have led in the World; That our Time is Short and Uncertain, and that if we would escape the Punishment of the Ungodly, and receive the Reward of the Righteous, which is the laying hold of Eternal Life, we ought for the time to come, to turn to God by a speedy Repentance, ceasing to do Evil and Learning to do Well: To seek after God Early, if happily he may be found of us, and lead such Lives for the future, as may be well pleasing in his sight.

A RELATION *of the* APPARITION *of* Mrs. VEAL.

THIS thing is so rare in all its Circumstances, and on so good Authority, that my Reading and Conversation has not given me any thing like it; it is fit to gratifie the most Ingenious and Serious Enquirer. Mrs. *Bargrave* is the Person to whom Mrs. *Veal* Appeared after her Death; she is my Intimate Friend, and I can avouch for her Reputation, for these last fifteen or sixteen Years, on my own Knowledge; and I can confirm the Good Character she had from her Youth, to the time of my Acquaintance. Tho' since this Relation, she is Calumniated by some People, that are Friends to the Brother of Mrs. *Veal* who Appeared; who think the Relation of this Appearance to be a Reflection, and endeavour what they can to Blast Mrs. *Bargrave's* Reputation; and to Laugh the Story out of Countenance. But the Circumstances thereof, and the Chearful Disposition of Mrs. *Bargrave*, notwithstanding the unheard of ill Usage of a very Wicked Husband, there is not the least sign of Dejection in her Face; nor did I ever hear her let fall a Desponding or Murmuring Expression; nay, not when actually under her Husbands Barbarity; which I have been Witness to, and several other Persons of undoubted Reputation.

Now you must know, that Mrs. *Veal* was a Maiden Gentlewoman of about 30 Years of Age, and for some Years last past, had been troubled with Fits; which were perceived coming on her, by her going off from her Discourse very abruptly, to some impertinence: She was maintain'd by an only Brother, and kept his House in

Dover. She was a very Pious Woman, and her Brother a very Sober Man to all appearance: But now he does all he can to Null or Quash the Story. Mrs. *Veal* was intimately acquainted with Mrs. *Bargrave* from her Childhood. Mrs. *Veals* Circumstances were then Mean; her Father did not take care of his Children as he ought, so that they were exposed to Hardships: And Mrs. *Bargrave* in those days, had as Unkind a Father, tho' She wanted for neither Food nor Cloathing, whilst Mrs. *Veal* wanted for both: So that it was in the Power of Mrs. *Bargrave* to be very much her Friend in several Instances, which mightily endear'd Mrs. *Veal*; insomuch that she would often say, Mrs. *Bargrave* you are not only the Best, but the only Friend I have in the World; and no Circumstances of Life, shall ever dissolve my Friendship. They would often Con-dole each others adverse Fortune, and read together, *Drelincourt upon Death*, and other good Books: And so like two Christian Friends, they comforted each other under their Sorrow.

Sometime after, Mr. *Veals* Friends got him a Place in the Custom-House at *Dover*, which occasioned Mrs. *Veal* by little and little, to fall off from her Intimacy with Mrs. *Bargrave*, tho' there was never any such thing as a Quarrel; but an Indifferency came on by degrees, till at last Mrs. *Bargrave* had not seen her in two Years and a half; tho' above a Twelve Month of the time, Mrs. *Bargrave* had been absent from *Dover*, and this last half Year, has been in *Canterbury* about two Months of the time, dwelling in a House of her own.

In this House, on the Eighth of *September* last, viz. 1705, she was sitting alone in the Forenoon, thinking over her Unfortunate Life, and arguing her self into a due Resignation to Providence, tho' her condition seem'd

hard. And said she, *I have been provided for hitherto, and doubt not but I shall be still, and am well satisfied, that my Afflictions shall end, when it is most fit for me:* And then took up her Sewing-Work, which she had no sooner done, but she hears a Knocking at the Door; she went to see who it was there, and this prov'd to be Mrs. *Veal*, her Old Friend, who was in a Riding Habit: At that Moment of Time, the Clock struck Twelve at Noon.

Madam says Mrs. *Bargrave*, I am surprized to see you, you have been so long a stranger, but told her, she was glad to see her and offer'd to Salute her, which Mrs. *Veal* complied with, till their Lips almost touched, and then Mrs. *Veal* drew her hand cross her own Eyes, and said, *I am not very well*, and so waved it. She told Mrs. *Bargrave*, she was going a Journey, and had a great mind to see her first: But says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *how came you to take a Journey alone? I am amaz'd at it, because I know you have so fond a Brother.* O! says Mrs. *Veal*, *I gave my Brother the Slip, and came away, because I had so great a Mind to see you before I took my Journey.* So Mrs. *Bargrave* went in with her, into another Room within the first, and Mrs. *Veal* sat her self down in an Elbow-chair, in which Mrs. *Bargrave* was sitting when she heard Mrs. *Veal* Knock. Then says Mrs. *Veal*, *My Dear Friend, I am come to renew our Old Friendship again, and to beg your Pardon for my breach of it, and if you can forgive me you are one of the best of Women.* O! says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *don't mention such a thing, I have not had an uneasie thought about it, I can easily forgive it.* What did you think of me says Mrs. *Veal*? Says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *I thought you were like the rest of the World, and that Prosperity had made you forget your self and me.* Then Mrs. *Veal* reminded Mrs. *Bargrave* of the many Friendly Offices she did her in former Days, and much of

the Conversation they had with each other in the time of their Adversity; what Books they Read, and what Comfort in particular they received from *Drelincourt's Book of Death*, which was the best she said on that Subject, was ever Wrote. She also mentioned Dr. *Sherlock*, and two *Dutch Books* which were Translated, Wrote upon Death, and several others: But *Drelincourt* she said, had the clearest Notions of Death, and of the Future State, of any who have handled that Subject. Then she asked Mrs. *Bargrave*, whether she had *Drelincourt*; she said yes. Says Mrs. *Veal* fetch it, and so Mrs. *Bargrave* goes up Stairs, and brings it down. Says Mrs. *Veal*, Dear Mrs. *Bargrave*, *If the Eyes of our Faith were as open as the Eyes of our Body, we should see numbers of Angels about us for our Guard: The Notions we have of Heaven now, are nothing like what it is, as Drelincourt says. Therefore be comforted under your Afflictions, and believe that the Almighty has a particular regard to you; and that your Afflictions are Marks of Gods Favour: And when they have done the business they were sent for, they shall be removed from you. And believe me my Dear Friend, believe what I say to you, One Minute of future Happiness will infinitely reward you for all your Sufferings. For I can never believe,* (and claps her Hand upon her Knee, with a great deal of Earnestness, which indeed ran through all her Discourse) *that ever God will suffer you to spend all your Days in this Afflicted State: But be assured, that your Afflictions shall leave you, or you them in a short time.* She spake in that Pathetical and Heavenly manner, that Mrs. *Bargrave* wept several times; she was so deeply affected with it. Then Mrs. *Veal* mentioned Dr. *Hornecks Ascetick*, at the end of which, he gives an account of the Lives of the Primitive Christians. *Their Pattern she recommended to our Imitation*; and said, *their Conversation*

*was not like this of our Age. For now (says she) there is nothing but frothy vain Discourse, which is far different from theirs. Theirs was to Edification, and to Build one another up in the Faith; So that they were not as we are, nor are we as they are; but said she, We might do as they did. There was a Hearty Friendship among them, but where is it now to be found? Says Mrs. Bargrave, 'tis hard indeed to find a true Friend in these days. Says Mrs. Veal, Mr. Norris has a Fine Coppy of Verses, call'd Friendship in Perfection, which I wonderfully admire, have you seen the Book says Mrs. Veal? No, says Mrs. Bargrave, but I have the Verses of my own writing out. Have you, says Mrs. Veal, then fetch them; which she did from above Stairs, and offer'd them to Mrs. Veal to read, who refused, and wav'd the thing, saying, holding down her Head would make it ake, and then desired Mrs. Bargrave to read them to her, which she did. As they were admiring Friendship, Mrs. Veal said, Dear Mrs. Bargrave, I shall love you for ever: In the Verses, there is twice used the Word *Elysium*. Ah! says Mrs. Veal, These Poets have such Names for Heaven. She would often draw her Hand cross her own Eyes; and say, Mrs. Bargrave Don't you think I am mightily impaired by my Fits? No, says Mrs. Bargrave, I think you look as well as ever I knew you.*

After all this discourse, which the Apparition put in Words much finer than Mrs. Bargrave said she could pretend to, and was much more than she can remember (for it cannot be thought, that an hour and three quarters Conversation could all be retained, tho' the main of it, she thinks she does.) She said to Mrs. Bargrave, *she would have her write a Letter to her Brother, and tell him, she would have him give Rings to such and such; and that there was a Purse of Gold in her Cabinet, and that she would have*

Two Broad Pieces given to her Cousin Watson. Talking at this Rate, Mrs. *Bargrave* thought that a Fit was coming upon her, and so placed her self in a Chair, just before her Knees, to keep her from falling to the Ground, if her Fits should occasion it; for the Elbow Chair she thought would keep her from falling on either side. And to divert Mrs. *Veal* as she thought, she took hold of her Gown Sleeve several times, and commended it. Mrs. *Veal* told her, it was a Scower'd Silk, and newly made up. But for all this Mrs. *Veal* persisted in her Request, and told Mrs. *Bargrave* she must not deny her: and she would have her tell her Brother all their Conversation, when she had an opportunity. Dear Mrs. *Veal*, says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *this seems so impertinent, that I cannot tell how to comply with it; and what a mortifying Story will our Conversation be to a Young Gentleman?* Well, says Mrs. *Veal*, *I must not be deny'd.* Why, says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *'tis much better methinks to do it your self,* No, says Mrs. *Veal*; *tho' it seems impertinent to you now, you will see more reason for it hereafter.* Mrs. *Bargrave* then to satisfy her importunity, was going to fetch a Pen and Ink; but Mrs. *Veal* said, *let it alone now, and do it when I am gone; but you must be sure to do it:* which was one of the last things she enjoin'd her at parting; and so she promised her.

Then Mrs. *Veal* asked for Mrs. *Bargrave's* Daughter; she said she was not at home; but if you have a mind to see her says Mrs. *Bargrave*, I'll send for her. *Do*, says Mrs. *Veal*. On which she left her, and went to a Neighbours, to send for her; and by the Time Mrs. *Bargrave* was returning, Mrs. *Veal* was got without the Door in the Street, in the face of the *Beast-Market* on a Saturday (which is Market day) and stood ready to part, as soon as Mrs. *Bargrave* came to her. She askt her, *why she was in such haste?*

she said, *she must be going; tho' perhaps she might not go her journey till Monday.* And told Mrs. Bargrave *she hoped she should see her again, at her Cousin Watsons before she went whether she was a going.* Then she said, *she would not take her Leave of her,* and walk'd from Mrs. Bargrave in her view, till a turning interrupted the sight of her, which was three quarters after One in the Afternoon.

Mrs. *Veal* Dyed the 7th of *September* at 12 a Clock at Noon, of her Fits, and had not above four hours Senses before her Death, in which time she received the Sacrament. The next day after Mrs. *Veals* appearing being Sunday, Mrs. *Bargrave* was mightily indisposed with a Cold, and a Sore Throat, that she could not go out that day: but on Monday morning she sends a person to Captain *Watsons* to know if Mrs. *Veal* were there. They wondered at Mrs. *Bargraves* enquiry, and sent her Word, that she was not there, nor was expected. At this Answer Mrs. *Bargrave* told the Maid she had certainly mistook the Name, or made some blunder. And tho' she was ill, she put on her Hood, and went her self to Captain *Watsons*, tho' she knew none of the Family, to see if Mrs. *Veal* was there or not. They said, they wondered at her asking, for that she had not been in Town; they were sure, if she had, she would have been there. Says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *I am sure she was with me on Saturday almost two hours.* They said it was impossible, for they must have seen her if she had. In comes Captain *Watson*, while they were in Dispute, and said that Mrs. *Veal* was certainly Dead, and her Escocheons were making. This strangely surprised Mrs. *Bargrave*, who went to the Person immediately who had the care of them, and found it true. Then she related the whole Story to Captain *Watsons* Family, and what Gown she had on, and how striped. And that Mrs. *Veal* told her

it was Scowred. Then Mrs. *Watson* cry'd out, *you have seen her indeed, for none knew but Mrs. Veal and my self, that the Gown was Scowr'd*; and Mrs. *Watson* own'd that she described the Gown exactly; for, said she, *I helpt her to make it up*. This, Mrs. *Watson* blaz'd all about the Town, and avouch'd the Demonstration of the Truth of Mrs. *Bargraves* seeing Mrs. *Veal's* Apparition. And Captain *Watson* carried two Gentlemen immediately to Mrs. *Bargraves* House, to hear the Relation from her own Mouth. And then it spread so fast, that Gentlemen and Persons of Quality, the Judicious and Sceptical part of the World, flock't in upon her, which at last became such a Task, that she was forc'd to go out of the way. For they were in general, extreamly satisfyed of the truth of the thing; and plainly saw, that Mrs. *Bargrave* was no Hypochondriack, for she always appears with such a chearful Air, and pleasing Mien, that she has gain'd the favor and esteem of all the Gentry. And its thought a great favor if they can but get the Relation from her own Mouth. I should have told you before, that Mrs. *Veal* told Mrs. *Bargrave*, that her Sister and Brother in Law, were just come down from *London* to see her. Says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *how came you to order matters so Strangely? it could not be helpt* said Mrs. *Veal*; and her Sister and Brother did come to see her, and entred the Town of *Dover*, just as Mrs. *Veal* was expiring. Mrs. *Bargrave* asked her, whether she would not drink some Tea. Says Mrs. *Veal*, *I do not care if I do: But I'll Warrant this Mad Fellow* (meaning Mrs. *Bargraves* Husband,) *has broke all your Trinckets*. But, says Mrs. *Bargrave*, *I'll get something to Drink in for all that*; but Mrs. *Veal* wav'd it, and said, *it is no matter, let it alone*, and so it passed.

All the time I sat with Mrs. *Bargrave*, which was some Hours, she recollected fresh sayings of Mrs. *Veal*. And one material thing more she told Mrs. *Bargrave*, that Old Mr. *Breton* allowed Mrs. *Veal* Ten pounds a Year, which was a secret, and unknown to Mrs. *Bargrave*, till Mrs. *Veal* told it her. Mrs. *Bargrave* never varies in her Story, which puzzles those who doubt of the Truth, or are unwilling to believe it. A Servant in a Neighbours Yard adjoining to Mrs. *Bargraves* House, heard her talking to some body, an hour of the Time Mrs. *Veal* was with her. Mrs. *Bargrave* went out to her next Neighbours the very Moment she parted with Mrs. *Veal*, and told what Ravishing Conversation she had with an Old Friend, and told the whole of it. *Drelincourt's Book of Death* is, since this happened, Bought up strangely. And it is to be observed, that notwithstanding all this Trouble and Fatigue Mrs. *Bargrave* has undergone upon this Account, she never took the value of a Farthing, nor suffer'd her Daughter to take any thing of any Body, and therefore can have no Interest in telling the Story.

But Mr. *Veal* does what he can to stifle the matter, and said he would see Mrs. *Bargrave*; but yet it is certain matter [of] fact, that he has been at Captain *Watsons* since the Death of his Sister, and yet never went near Mrs. *Bargrave*; and some of his Friends report her to be a great Lyar, and that she knew of Mr. *Breton's* Ten Pounds a Year. But the Person who pretends to say so, has the Reputation of a Notorious Lyar, among persons which I know to be of undoubted Repute. Now Mr. *Veal* is more a Gentleman, than to say she Lyes; but says, a bad Husband has Craz'd her. But she needs only to present her self, and it will effectually confute that Pretence. Mr.

Veal says he ask'd his Sister on her Death Bed, whether she had a mind to dispose of any thing, and she said, No. Now what the things which *Mrs. Veals* Apparition would have disposed of, were so Trifling, and nothing of Justice aimed at in their disposal, that the design of it appears to me to be only in order to make *Mrs. Bargrave*, so to demonstrate the Truth of her Appearance, as to satisfy the World of the Reality thereof, as to what she had seen and heard: and to secure her Reputation among the Reasonable and understanding part of Mankind. And then again, *Mr. Veal* owns that there was a Purse of Gold; but it was not found in her Cabinet, but in a Comb-Box. This looks improbable, for that *Mrs. Watson* own'd that *Mrs. Veal* was so very careful of the Key of her Cabinet, that she would trust no Body with it. And if so, no doubt she would not trust her Gold out of it. And *Mrs. Veals* often drawing her hand over her Eyes, and asking *Mrs. Bargrave*, whether her Fits had not impair'd her; looks to me as if she did it on purpose to remind *Mrs. Bargrave* of her Fits, to prepare her not to think it strange that she should put her upon Writing to her Brother to dispose of Rings and Gold, which lookt so much like a dying Persons Bequest; and it took accordingly with *Mrs. Bargrave*, as the effect of her Fits coming upon her; and was one of the many Instances of her Wonderful Love to her, and Care of her, that she should not be affrighted: which indeed appears in her whole management; particularly in her coming to her in the day time, waving the Salutation, and when she was alone; and then the manner of her parting, to prevent a second attempt to Salute her.

Now, why *Mr. Veal* should think this Relation a Reflection, (as 'tis plain he does by his endeavouring to stifle

it) I can't imagine, because the Generality believe her to be a good Spirit, her Discourse was so Heavenly. Her two great Errands were to comfort Mrs. *Bargrave* in her Affliction, and to ask her Forgiveness for her Breach of Friendship, and with a Pious Discourse to encourage her. So that after all, to suppose that Mrs. *Bargrave* could Hatch such an Invention as this from *Friday-Noon*, till *Saturday-Noon*, (supposing that she knew of Mrs. *Veals* Death the very first Moment) without jumbling Circumstances, and without any Interest too; she must be more Witty, Fortunate, and Wicked too, than any indifferent Person I dare say, will allow. I asked Mrs. *Bargrave* several times, *If she was sure she felt the Gown*. She answered Modestly, *if my Senses be to be relied on, I am sure of it*. I asked her, *If she heard a Sound, when she clapt her Hand upon her Knee*: She said, *she did not remember she did*: And she said, *she Appeared to be as much a Substance as I did, who talked with her. And I may said she, be as soon persuaded that your Apparition is talking to me now, as that I did not really see her; for I was under no manner of Fear, I received her as a Friend, and parted with her as such. I would not, says she, give one Farthing to make any one believe it, I have no Interest in it; nothing but trouble is entail'd upon me for a long time for ought that I know; and had it not come to Light by Accident, it would never have been made Publick*. But now she says, *she will make her own Private Use of it, and keep her self out of the way as much as she can*. And so she has done since. She says, *she had a Gentleman who came thirty Miles to her to hear the Relation; and that she had told it to a Room full of People at a time*. Several particular Gentlemen have had the Story from Mrs. *Bargraves* own Mouth.

This thing has very much affected me, and I am as well satisfied, as I am of the best grounded Matter of Fact. And why should we dispute Matter of Fact, because we cannot solve things, of which we can have no certain or demonstrative Notions, seems strange to me: Mrs. *Bargraves's* Authority and Sincerity alone, would have been undoubted in any other Case.

FINIS

**PRESIDENT'S
SECRETARIAT
LIBRARY**

